1. Synopsis
2. Chapter 1 (M)
3. Chapter 2
4. Chapter 3
5. Chapter 4 (M)
6. Chapter 5
7. Chapter 6
8. Chapter 7
9. Chapter 8 (M)
10. Chapter 9
11. Chapter 10 (M)
12. Chapter 11
13. Chapter 12
14. Chapter 13 (M)
15. Story Time (Not an Update)
16. Chapter 14 (M)
17. Chapter 15
18. Chapter 16
19. Chapter 17
20. Chapter 18 (M)
21. Chapter 19 (M)
22. Chapter 20
23. Chapter 21 (M)
24. Chapter 22
25. Chapter 23
26. Chapter 24
27. Chapter 25
28. Chapter 26 (M)
29. Chapter 27
30. Chapter 28
31. Chapter 29 (M)
32. Chapter 30
33. Chapter 31
34. Chapter 32
35. Chapter 33
36. Chapter 34
37. Chapter 35

38. Chapter 36
39. Chapter 37
40. Chapter 38
41. Chapter 39
42. Chapter 40
43. Chapter 41 (M)
44. END
45. Birthday (M) ?

# Synopsis

Jennie was born and raised by a very religious Roman Catholic family. Her father is a governor in Busan. She was expected that she will enter a convent for nuns in where she would serve the LORD for all her life and ever since, she's an active participant in their church in where she met a very dark and sinful silhouette of Lalisa Manoban.

Lisa was punished and forced to live with her grandparents because of what she did in Seoul, her parents consider it as a punishment but to Lisa it is a challenge. A challenge to bend and fuck such person like Jennie.

"Let's take a bet chu, at the end of this month that woman will going to kneel down before me. While her mouth is wide open - sucking my cock and her eyes will beg to let me fuck the shit out of her"

---

Thoughts?

# Chapter 1 (M)

3rd Person's POV

Loud music echoes along the four corners of the club. Drunk people starts shouting and dancing to it's rhythm. Some are grinding each others private parts, some are already having sex in the corner and some are having drugs.

"I thought you can't come here?", Jackson Wang he's Lisa's friend the owner of the club that Lisa just got in.

The latter smirk and greeted him, bumping of both their fist.

"I escaped", Lisa shouted to his ear due to the loud music that's penetrating the whole place.

When Jackon heard it he laugh louder and guide Lisa to one of the table.

"Here, enjoy yourself and call me of you need anything. I'll be back!!", he shouted hastily and Lisa was left alone in a table that have two almost naked girl that was way drunk and high to be called normal.

Lisa sat on the long coach and instantly take a shot to one of the glass filled with tequila. Her face didn't even grimace in disgust instead she took a lemon and put it on her mouth then one of the girls kiss her and suck her lips spreading the sourness of the fruit to both of their mouths.

The latter pull away and tilted her head and Lisa lick her sweaty neck as a salt that made the girl moan amd hold her head, gripping it tightly.

Lisa rested her back against the couch when a waiter put something on their table that made her got up.

"Ohhh - it's been so long since I've been high", she added and took a bit of the illegal powder sniffing it to her nose and taste some of it through her mouth but she still opened it and the other girls kneel on her left side and suck her tounge, sharing the drugs to her heated kiss.

"Fuck!!", the two cursed when the drug is starting to do it's purpose.

Both heart pound so fast, their senses starts to get dull, the place starts to get wild and confusing but Lisa.

Lisa love all of it. It's making her--

High

"Fuck yeaaaah!!!", she shouted and tilted her head when one of the girls kisses her neck and the other was kneeling before her.

"What's your n-name?", she managed to asked the girl that has been kissing her torridly while she held her waist closer to her.

"Mina", the girl answered and gasped when Lisa lick her neck and grip her waist tightly. Her teeth is gritting and wanting something that she suddenly felt irritated.

"Suck my dick Lina", she said and the girl was to high to complain about her name being wrongly said.

Lisa leaned over them and hold both of their heads gripping it tightly making the two tilt their heads up for her.

"Open your mouth", she said and they both obliged to what she want. Lisa let go and took a shot in the table four-in-a-row but she didn't most likely feel the pain it brought to her throat until she couldn't settle for shot glasses anymore.

Lisa took thr bottle and drank it straight from it's mouth and when satisfied she pour it down to the two woman who was kneeling on the floor. She pour it to their already open mouth as they moaned and savor it's taste and drank it like a women deprived of water. It drips down to their bodies making then wet, mixing the sweats and alcohol together.

Unsatisfied, Lisa take another hit of the drugs, sniffing through her nose as she groaned pleasureable before putting a little amount to her tongue and kiss the girl the was not exposed to such illegality. She tried to protest but Lisa hold her face firm, sticking her tongue to her mouth helplessly. While Mina took drug on her own to satisfy herself.

And the drug didn't took long to take effect. The two strips their clothes off leaving nothing behind while they help Lisa to take her pants off reaveling such hard, long, thick and veiny cock.

Both girls gasped, surpised to what they saw. Lisa is known to have such genitalia but this was the first time they saw it.

Both of their center tingle in such pleasure as they open their mouth. The other taking the head while Mina suck Lisa's balls.

The latter only rested her back while she took a cigarrite and lit it. Taking puff and letting out groans of pleasure because of the two lady.

"Lisaaaaa!!", Jackson came and sat beside her with a girl on his side, already naked too.

Lisa could only smile, drugs is still on her system. Ecstasy taking over her body and Jackson was not to dumb to understand.

"I'm glad you're enjoying yourself", he shouted in her ear.

"I'm always enjoying myself when I'm here!", Lisa replied and took another puff with her cigar and she pulled the other girls head and puff the smoke out to her mouth and the girl could only shrink in pleasure when Lisa grabs her breast, cupping it tightly.

"Now if you'll excuse me Jackson. I'm going to fuck bitches tonight", Lisa said taking out condom from the table ripping it by her mouth before giving it to Mina.

Jackson only laugh and tap her shoulder.

"This is my gift for you. Her name is Veron. You can fuck this bitch too", he shouted to her ears before leaving the four behind.

Veron found Lisa sexy and hot. A rare gem to find into such demonic place. She immediately sat on her dick making her moan in pleasure as her eyes closed and head tilted while her mouth open and starts moving into Lisa's hard manhood , the two are seeking and wanting the same pleasure.

The other two didn't mind what she did and Mina continue to give pleasure to it's balls while the girl was sitted in the arm rest of the couch, her pussy is in Lisa's face in between her legs.

Loud moans and groans echoes louder and louder. Seeking sinful pleasure and warthm.

Sweats

Alcohol

Drugs

Loud music

Cigarittes

Sex

To Lisa this was heaven. This is where she belong, this is what she deserve.

She thought that she's already tainted with sins why not add more of it? She will still burned to hell anyway.

"Fu-ck!!! YESSSSS", the three shouted in having orgasmic bliss at the same time when Lisa was fucking Veron with her dick, the girl with her mouth and Mina with her fingers, pushing all four into her wet pussy.

And Lisa was in the verge of cumming. Sweats dropping, eyes are tightly closed, her brows furrowed as the familiar pleasure came over her.

"FUCK!!!", she groaned as her cum sprayed to the latex that was protecting her manhood from all it's sins.

Lisa immedietly pull the girl away when Veron was about to cling into her while Lisa is still catching her breath.

The latter was about to stand up and get high on the dance floor and find another slut to fuck with. When loud police siren mixed the music from the club.

Police came with guns on their hands, pointing at everyone. All the people gasp and starts to panic and run outside to have chances not to get caught. The three woman left Lisa as they run through the exit that VIPs only knew about but, Lisa who was tired and fed up to this scheme just waited for the police to arrive and even drank another shot throught itsi bottle while a cigar in her hand.

---

Lisa's POV

"Aww!!", I groaned when my own father punched my face when I arrive in my house. His nose is flaming with so much anger while gritting his teeth, wanting to hurt me more.

But I couldn't seem to mind and just wipe the blood away and just look smugly at him. While his mistress hold his arm, calming him down.

I rolled my eyes before I took off my jacket and sat on the couch.

"HOW MANY TIMES DO I NEED TO TELL YOU TO BEHAVE LISA!!!!", he shouted so loud that made me whince, it's making my head hurts much more.

But still he continue to say something.

"You got caught a lot of times because of that hell", he added but when he notice that I'm just looking around and not actually paying attention to him. He groaned and held my collar angrily.

He looks at me in full of disgrace, clenching his teeth before he punch me again and again.

"Stop!! Don't hurt her anymore Marcus", my stepmother said and

pull us away holding my father from getting near me.

"Fuck!!", I cursed and spat blood into the carpeted floor, ruining it's elegance and beauty.

Well I already did, literally.

"You!!!", he said and pointed a finger at me.

"I can't just let you ruin my name because of what you're doing!!", he added. His clothes that he usually worn all neat and tidy got crampled because of me.

My father is a well known bussiness man in whole Asia. He's a public figure, from it's succesful real estate to his own pharmaceutical company in which my own mother worked hard for.

He got all credit to it and his own mistress who is now my stepmother.

I just sighed and shakes my head wanting to dismiss this talk and sleep in my room when he said something that made me stop.

"You're going to Busan with your grandparents, to keep you away from all this clubs and visces. This isn't you Lisa. You were so inno-"

"Stop. Don't you dare", I cutted him off and walk closer to my father.

"Fine, I will do what you want but don't talk to what I am before because for all we know. You're the one who changed me", I said straight to his face before I glared at both of them and walk off leaving them behind.

"Busan?", I smirk and closed my eyes laying comfortable on my bed.

"What's the difference it have with Seoul?"

---

# Chapter 2

Jennie's POV

I stand before everyone with the bible in front of me and caressed the word from its paper. My heart felt full, and my body felt shivers as words utter from my mouth.

"The first reading," I said and bowed to everyone.

"2 Cor 3:15-4:1, 3-6", I look at everyone with full sincerity as I share the word of our saviour.

"Brothers and sisters," I gulped down the saliva that was stuck in my throat and inhaled silently to overcome my nervousness. Then my gaze went to my parents, encouraging me to go on.

They both look at me with those proud eyes. The way they stare glimers with all affection and pride. It was understandable because never in my life I ever did make them disappointed of me.

"To this day, whenever Moses is read,

a veil lies over the hearts of the children of Israel,

but whenever a person turns to the Lord, the veil is removed.

Now the Lord is the Spirit and where the Spirit of the Lord is,

there is freedom.

All of us, gazing with unveiled face on the glory of the Lord,

are being transformed into the same image from glory to glory,

as from the Lord who is the Spirit. "I stop and look at everyone again. I caressed the word with all gentleness before I continued, but then I felt like someone was looking to me, penetrating my soul

in such gazes that somehow I felt scared and vulnerable.

I looked up and found someone unfamiliar. She was with Mrs. And Mr. Manoban a well-known rich couple in Busan. She was seated in the middle of them, she was posh and expensive even with a tattoo on her left arm and a black earring on her right ear.

I gasped silently when her dark eyes met mine it felt like she's looking through me, wanting to know what's inside my mind and her lips that looks so red and pouty smirked and her aura felt like it screams sin and desire for 'something'.

My knees start to weaken, and I unconsciously grip the lecture table for support.

I looked away and sighed deeply, trying to calm myself self before I continued.

"Therefore, since we have this ministry through the mercy shown us,

we are not discouraged.

And even though our Gospel is veiled,

it is veiled for those who are perishing,

in whose case the god of this age

has blinded the minds of the unbelievers,

so that they may not see the light of the Gospel

of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God.

For we do not preach ourselves but Jesus Christ as Lord,

and ourselves as your slaves for the sake of Jesus.

For God, who said, let light shine out of darkness,

has shone in our hearts to bring to light

the knowledge of the glory of God

on the face of Jesus Christ. " I managed to read with all sincerity and passion. That I felt my heart bursting because the LORD has given me strength to finish it even with my nervousness that's taking over my body.

This was the second time happened, the first was when it was my first lecture in a holy mass, and that time was understandable but now, there is no reason to get nervous and scared at all.

Every time I gave lectures to people, there was this something in my heart that was calm and tamed by all of my emotions. However, today was different. And my mind keeps pointing to the woman that was sited in between the old well-known rich couple in our place.

I stared at her again, but my heart sank when I saw her already gone. I tried to move my neck, looking for her

"Ehem." I looked at the priest, and he gestured his hand for me to continue. I realised that I was still not done, and I'm still in front of a hundred people waiting for me to finish my lecture.

I felt embarrassed and bowed down at everyone before I timidly smiled.

"The word of the Lord, and all reply, Thanks be to God." I continued after I cleared my throat.

"Thanks to be God," they replied, and that's my cue to bow again before I went down the stage and sat on my designated seat.

My heart becomes chaotic the moment I sit down. I hold my chest with my hand, trying to calm it down while I gently bit my lips.

"Are you okay?"I heard Irene ask and hold my shoulder, looking all worried at me.

I smiled at her and nodded my head.

"I'm okay, just feeling a little under the weather," I replied.

Irene nodded her head and walked towards the platform and did her duty as a cantor.

I sat down properly, adjusted to my seats, and inhaled deeply. I'm trying to focus myself on Irene's part. Taking the word of the LORD in my heart, I hope it will calm me down.

"Responsorial Psalm 85:9 and 10, 11-12, 13-14. The glory of the Lord will dwell in our land. I will hear what God proclaims; the LORD-for he proclaims peace to his people.Near indeed is his salvation to those who fear him, glory dwelling in our land."

"All replies that the glory of the Lord will dwell in our land."

"The Glory of the Lord will dwell in our land," we all replied.

---

"Jennie, are you alright?"My dad said hastily while he held my hand. While my mother went to my side, rubbing my back while they all looked worried for me.

The mass is done, and it's time for them to go, while I'll be staying for a little longer to help with the free meals for every child that wanted to eat.

I smiled at both my parents.

"I'm alright, something just weird happened to me," I said, which made both of them look at each other.

"Maybe it was a calling Jennie," the priest interrupted and went to us.

We all bowed down at him, and he smiled and bowed his head also.

"It could be father because ever since our child always wanted to be a nun, to serve the LORD in all its wisdom and glory," my mother said to him.

It was not a surprise for him, and he smiled proudly at me.

"We as the servant of the God is special Jennie. Our calling is one of strength to be away from all of this sins and desire that every human being have, "he said at me, and I could only nod my head, agreeing to everything.

"Of course father", I replied

My dad laughs proudly while he stares at me. His eyes scream adoration for everything I do.

"You see, I'm very proud of her father because she's not like every other teenager. When I go to Seoul for meetings and event I always felt sad to all the young people that has not been able to know the wisdom and true power of our God", my dad said all concern to what he witnessed in Seoul.

I've have been in Seoul, and I can say their place are exciting. It was loud and eventful. All the people have their own rules in their life. They are free and liberated just like everyone else.

"They just didn't have someone to guide them and that's a very sad reality because they are less and less people who wanted to serve him", he said and pointed the sky and sighed worriedly.

They kept talking about all the virtues of our saviour, and I was just standing and looking around at everything, and a hope to find that someone I saw in my lecture.

"Good morning," I flinched when we heard someone talk, and we all bowed down when we realised it was the old couple.

"Mr and Mrs Manoban," my dad greeted

I immediately look behind them,trying to find the woman I saw earlier, but I felt disappointed when I found nothing. So I just smile timidly, greeting them with respect.

"Are you alright, dear? You seem tense earlier, " Mrs Manoban said worriedly.

I just bowed down and smiled at her.

"I'm fine," I replied and excused myself to leave, which I reason that I already needed to help in giving children free food.

They all nodded and agreed.

I sighed when I was far away from them. Shaking my head as I felt all the emotional pressure taking my whole system.

I wanted this.

I already accepted my destiny.

--

"Enjoy your meal," I said to one of the kids as I gave them their food. He smiled and hugged my waist, which made my heart melted and tapped his head.

"Thank you," he said and walked off with a big smile on his face, feeling all happy with what he had.

I've never been experienced as deprived of everything. I have food, shelter and money. And the love I got for my parents and especially I was opened and have a beautiful relationship with our Lord and I could never ask for more.

Life is good for me.

"Jennie, can you go and get more cups? We are running out," Irene said while she's busy putting food on the children's plate.

I smiled and nodded at her even though she couldn't see me before I walked towards the kitchen.

I was looking all over the place, and I can't seem to find these cups, and I'm starting to grow impatient thinking that they are already waiting for me, and they all badly needing it.

"Finally," I said when I looked to one of the cabinets, but my hope was shattered again when I couldn't reach it.

I keep grunting and have already tried tiptoeing to reach the cups,

but I can't still hold it and was about to leave, but then someone came closer to me and reached the cups by herself.

I turned around and looked up the person who made my heart beat quicken abnormally. Her jawline was sharp as a knife was displayed through my vision while her pouty lips were so close to me. Then there's this feeling in my stomach that was flatterin and aggressively getting wild.

"Here," she said, so close, her mentol-like breathed brushed against my face, which made me shiver, and goosebumps travel through my skin.

---

I'm feeling scared writing this tbh 🧢.

# Chapter 3

Jennie's POV

I look away when she's an inch closer to me. Our bodies were on the verge of touching each other and not to mention my heart that suddenly kept hammering so loud that it made me nervous and shaky.

"Are you alright?," she asked and tried to hold my face that made me push her. It's suffocating that she's so near me.

"What the hell?!!"she cursed and looked at me, shocked to what I did.

I panic and was about to run away with the cup on my hand, but she stopped me with her body.

Now I'm smelling her scent again. Her perfume feels so addicting and smells really good and it's making my nostrils filled with satisfaction.

But I must not be acting like this. So, with a shaky voice , I cleared my throat and looked at her, that I hope I didn't do when she's already staring at me. Her gaze was making me nervous and scared of 'something'.

"Where do you think you're going?" She asked, taking as step closer to me, that's made me step back until I'm cornered because of the wall behind us.

"I-- I need to give this to the children," I tried to explain while I looked at everything else, not just her.

But she had another plan when she held my jaw and forced me to stare her face. I flinched when her warm hands touched my skin, and when I saw her cold eyes, I felt shiver run through my spine,

feeling scared of her.

My eyes went wide, and my heart beat doubles when she went to my ear. I whimpered when her breath touched my earlobe.

"You're a bad girl", she whispered and grunts holding me tighter and she looks at me, licking her lips while her hands travels through my neck and there, she settled her hand, caressing my skin softly.

That made me gasp and hold her hand for support. I can't help it. She's making me weak.

I looked at her, and I saw how amused she was while looking at my condition.

"I- what do y-you want?" I managed to ask, but she only smirked and moved away from me.

That made me gasp a large amount of air when she finally moved and let me go. I didn't even know that I'm holding much breath because of her.

Then she went closer to me again, which made me shock and was about to step back, but thankfully, she didn't hold me like earlier.

Then her face went closer to me, brushing her nose to my cheeks as she went to my ear.

"I'm going to tell you what I want, but not this soon, Jennie, or should I say sister Jennie?" She whispered through my ear, and I flinched when she put my hair back properly that made her chuckled, mocking me.

---

"What took you so long? The children are all thirsty," Irene scolded me when I got back, and I could only apologise for what I did.

I can't still keep myself calm after what happened. There's still a feeling of warmth from her it's making me uncomfortable. It might be weird feeling all of this from her, I just met her. I don't even

know her name.

"It's fine. Just helped in distributing the water," she just said to me.

I nodded my head and sighed loudly, trying to shake my head to erase the memories of earlier.

While filling everyone's cup and giving it to them one by one, my dad came together with the old couple.

"Princess, I need to go. Take care in here,"my dad said that made me smile and hug him goodbye.

"How about mom?"I asked

"Oh, she already left. She said there's a problem they need to fix in her bakeshop," he answered that made me nod.

The children went to him too, saying their thankyou's and appreciation because my dad is one of the sponsors in this church.

"I'm off now. Mr and Mrs Manoban, please excuse me, " then my dad left.

"How are the children dear?"I heard Mrs. Manoban said to me while she helped me in giving the children their waters.

I looked at her and smiled

"They are doing well, ma'am, but this boy named Lee is not here. Usually, he would come and help me after he's done eating. I'm quite worried."I explained that made her gasp worriedly.

"Perhaps do you know what happened?"

"Not really, but I heard that his father got sick, and I was planning on visiting them soon."She nodded her head and smiled at one of the children before she went to me and held my hand.

"You should go with my granddaughter she quite knows well about medicine," she said and called someone from my back, and that made me hold my breath again when the woman from earlier run

towards us. My heart starts to pound in all nervousness and fear when she went to us, closer and closer.

"Grandma," she said and kissed her cheeks as she stood close to Mrs. Manoban.

I was just looking at her, confused about everything.

What?

So she's their granddaughter?

I stared at her in bewilderment, but she only smirked at me, looking at my body so slowly that I could feel her gaze myself. I gulped on how she touched her lips while she continued looking into my legs, which made me nervous and conscious of the way she stared.

"Jennie!" I heard Mrs. Manoban called my name, which made me look back at her as I gulped and tried to erase the look of her granddaughter's face.

"I- I apologise ma'am I'm just not feeling well today," I said. She looks at me, concern and helps me get seated to one of the chairs while she's still holding my hand.

"You shouldn't go to church if it's that bad," she said and held my neck, but what confused me when I didn't even flinch or got scared.

So what's the difference between her and her granddaughter?

"You know I can't do that, ma'am," I said, which made her smile at me. Understanding what I meant.

"Ehem," I flinched when we heard someone fake a coughed.

Who else?

"Oh, by the way, dear. This is my only granddaughter Lisa. She's a doctor, so I'm sure she would be a big help if ever you'll get to visit Lee's parents, "she said.

I was surprised by what she said as I looked at the young woman

behind her.

She doesn't look like she's that old and a doctor?

Wow

I felt a little to myself and even felt a bit of disgrace because, I admit. I have judged her based on her appearance.

I stood up and bowed at her. Feeling guilty to what I acted.

"Nice to mee you unnie," I said, which made her gasp, and I even heard her grandmother laugh.

"Oh dear, don't call her that. She doesn't like it,"

Even confused, I nodded at them

"Lisa", she said and gave me her hand, which I accepted but I quickly took it when I felt shock of electricity travels through my skin.

"You know what? You should go. I'll go explain to Father Mark about your situation and Lisa use my car and drive her to her home please, "her grandma said.

"What? No ma'am I'm al--

"Shh it's fine. You need to go home and rest. And Lisa drive her safely", then she left but not before I heard what this Lisa said.

"You bet I will"

I don't know what she really meant but it made me scared of her.

---

"So a doctor hm?", I tried to talk when I felt awkwardness as we drive to my house.

But it didn't work when she just continues to drive and didn't even look at me.

So I kept my silent and just focus my eyes on the road. Trying to find something entertaining, I got my bag and took a bible from it.

I sighed before I read to where I left off, focusing to every word as I hold it carefully not until someone snatch it from me and throw it at the backseat.

"Oh God! What did you do?", I asked and took my seat belt off and tried to reach the bible from here when she push me back to my seat and put the seat belt on herself.

"Chill it's just a book", she says that made me irritated.

"It's a bible not just a book", I quoted and was about to get it again when she suddenly stops the car and went closer to me.

So close that made me hold my breath again while hers was against my face, now it smelled cigarette and mint.

"You smoke?", I asked

But she only smirked and her nose brushes my face that made me whimper as I closed my eyes letting her do what she want.

-

"So tell me why do you want to be a nun?", I open my eyes when I felt the car move again and I saw her sitting back properly on her seat.

I gulped and shake my head while I bit my lips trying to focus my self.

"It's a -- my mother wanted me to become one", I answered that made her look at me.

"How about you? Do you want it also?"

"Of course, I learned to love it from time to time I continue to serve God. It's a beautiful feeling that's why I told them that I wanted to be one"

She look confused by my answer but she chose to shut her mouth and just nodded.

"How about you? I wasn't expecting you to be a doctor", I said that made her look at me seriously

Somehow I felt scared again to the way she stares at me. I cleared my throat wanting to changed the topic.

"How old are you?", I asked instead and this time she was calm as she continue to drives.

"28"

I gasped loudly and shock to what I know.

"Are you serious?", I asked but she didn't talk so I was just sited and got surprised myself.

She just looks so young and 28? Wow I was not clearly expecting that.

"We are here", I heard her said when she stops the car and look at me. Her dark gazes penetrating me again while she move and help me with my seat belt.

"It's stuck", I said and tried to pull it off of me but I flinched when her warm hand touches mine while her breath was just an inch closer to my face, making me shiver.

"Jennie", she said my name that made my heart race and hammered against my chest when I look up at her.

Her dark eyes stares straightly at me, locking our gazed together.

"You're one beautiful innocent fuck"

# Chapter 4 (M)

Lisa's POV

"Wh-what?"she stutters while looking at me, she look tense and confused about what I said.

I smirk and touch her face, which makes her flinch. Her loud gasp echoed in the car, and I could even feel her holding her breath.

"Chill out," I whispered to her ear, blowing it a little that made her whimper and grip my shirt.

Amused, I look at her hand in my shirt, it's shaking, and I even feel the coldness from it. While her eyes slowly looked away from me but I didn't let her and force her to stare at me again, locking our gazed together.

"You're beautiful, Jennie," I said sincerely. Her eyes went wide, surprised to what I said. Her mouth was partly open, thinking twice about what to say.

"Thank you," she managed to say, and I only held her chin, caressing my thumb against it while I continued to stare at her eyes.

"Now tell me. How old are you?," I asked curiously.

I saw her gulp while she stared at me, and her mouth was shaking, trying to answer my question.

Fuck!

I wanted to kiss her lips so badly

"18," she answered, and somehow, I was thinking twice if I should continue this or not.

She's barely in the legal age. Her father is in politics while their

name are all famous in Busan. It will cause so much trouble if I'll do what I want.

"You're so young. There's a life ahead of you. Why are you so sure about being nun?" I asked instead, curious to the real reason.

She stops and brows furrowed thinking to what I said.

"It's just so beautiful to serve our God and have this relationship with him. Away from sins and temptations," she answered while her eyes glistened, and I'm controlling myself to not groan for all the things she said.

I just shut my mouth by her answer and nodded my head, and I was about to pull away when she suddenly held me tightly.

"A a-about earlier am I really that beautiful?"she asked, seeking validation for what I said to her.

I stare at her confused, does she not have someone to tell her that? Because in all honesty, she's beyond beautiful. She has this innocent face like a baby, but then when you continue to look at her, you don't know that you're already trapped into her spell.

Jennie is a seductress, she's unimaginable fuck. Her eyes that are so unique that feels like she's calling you to fuck the shit out of her. It feels like she's seducing you unintentionally, like her eyes were begging me, to touch her, to ruin her, to rip her apart and just thrust yourself dominantly inside her tight and virgin pussy.

Fuck!! I'm getting hard.

It feels uncomfortable having a hard on that I intentionally groan and push my face to her neck, resting against it.

I felt her flinch by my sudden I intrusion, her hands went to my hair gripping it softly.

"Ahm Lisa?," she asked

But I didn't budged instead, my hands went to her waist, gripping it tightly. Already turned on by this position.

Fuck!

"Jennie," I whispered her name against her neck as I put small kisses into it, and I grew crazier when she grip my hair tightly while her soft moans let's out from her innocent mouth

Damn!

I continued to grip her waist, caressing it while I put my hands inside her dress and her moans grow louder, and I could feel her own heartbeats vibrating against mine. Her breath was so loud and deep, making me lose into such sensuality.

Until I couldn't take it and suck her neck, marking its innocence.

"Lisa!!" She shouted and pulled me away. She's catching her breath while she stares at me, surprise to what we did. Her face is all red and sweaty while her eyes are damp and on the verge of crying.

But I couldn't feel regret even when I saw her state.

She got me big time, and I will make her want me.

Even if she goes to hell with me, the fuck I care with her innocence, she's mine already and I'll be the devil who will taunt her to this desire of sex and lust.

-

"Hey Lisa", I nodded at Jisoo when I got inside the house. She's already waiting for me in the living room, sitting to one of my grandmother's beautiful vintage couches.

"How are things in Seoul?" I asked and lit my cigar, taking puff before I look back at her.

She only shakes her head while looking at me and rested her back while she looks at her phone.

"Nothing much change. They just kept asking on where the hell you are because you've never been back to the club", she replies and fan the smoke away from her that I could only shakes my head and

force to throw my cigarette away.

"Right, this girl has been nagging me to where you are. Like literally it's so annoying," she said dramatically while she stands up and sited beside me.

"Who?", I just asked and kisses her neck playfully that made her chuckled and push me away.

"Stop it stupid. I'm not one of your girls," she said and pinch my cheek. I groaned and just let out a little chuckle.

Jisoo is my lawyer, my eyes and ears to what was happening around while I'm away.

"And to answer your question, I think her name was Veron?"she said, and I could only shake my head for that unfamiliar name.

I heard Jisoo laugh and slap my arm, amused by my attitude.

"I met this girl," I suddenly said

She stops and looks at me, surprise to what I said.

"Don't tell me you're already in love, Manoban?"she teased and nudged me by her shoulder slightly, which made me glare at her.

"No, nothing serious," I said as I imagined Jennie's face. How her innocence can capture my interests.

"She's a very religious person even wanting to enter a convent for nun actually," I told her what Jennie was like, but I didn't really tell her everything, especially her name and age.

No matter how Jisoo tolerated my attitude, she's against me having sex with barely legal.

"It's a big challenge Lis, come to think of it. You're not just competing with other men this time. It will be God you're against with, "she seriously said that made me look at her, as smirk appear in my mouth.

"Let's take a bet chu, at the end of this month that woman will going to kneel down before me. While her mouth is wide open - sucking my cock and her eyes will beg to let me fuck the shit out of her"

---

Jennie's POV

I was woken up by the rustling of the cold win. I didn't even know that I left my window open before I sleep. I turned to my right and discovered that it was just three am in the morning.

Even tired I was about to get up when I felt something in my center. My heart starts to hammers as I felt nervous to what was happening.

My hands are shaking while I hold my blanket, scared to what I might see if I tried to lift it but this unfamiliar feeling overwhelms me as I continue to spread my legs.

Confused and curious I lift my duvet and was surprise to see Lisa underneath me, her gazes was so dark while she lock our gazes together. Her hands are holding my legs, wanting to spread it more while her head is in between it.

"Oh God!"I let out when she suddenly did something in my center, as gush of wetness drips out of me. All weak and helpless when I hold her hair tightly, pushing her more.

"Wh-what it this?"I asked as my eyes closed overwhelm by this feeling.

It feels good

It feels amazing

So beautiful

And so sensual

"Lisaaaa~", I said, and I unconsciously moved my hips to sync it

with her. My head moves side to side, trying to fight this overwhelming feeling. Trap by its sensitivity and passion.

"Oh my," I continued as my hand went to my breast and touched it that made whimper to its feeling.

"It feels so good," I shouted as I continued to carress my chest while Lisa was down on me doing God knows what.

My body arched as I tapped my tip and played my nipple and groped my chest while my hips moved faster and faster to Lisa's mouth.

"Oh, Lisa!"

"Lisa"

"Lisa"

I said her name again and again, breathless. As something in my self wanting to reach something beautiful something desired , something sensual.

"Oh God! It's happening!!" I shouted and gripped her head firmly , not wanting her to stop.

"More! Please more, "I beg as my body moves frantically. My hand grips my chest tighter, seeking sensual feelings.

My mouth is open while my eyes are tightly closed, I'm holding my breathed, grunting and moaning , wanting to reach something.

"Please Lisaaa~ don't stop", I begs and push her harder while I grip her hair then her eyes look at me, it was so dark and cold and her smirk appear on her mouth before she dives into me again while her eyes closed savoring my center and I could only closed my eyes wanting to reach this lustful feeling.

Wait

"Lust?"

-

I woke up feeling frightened and scared to what I just dreamed, my sweats dropping endlessly while I looked around, and it was already morning. My windows are all close and -

My nervousness overcame my body as I slowly lift my duvet, scared to what I might discovered but I let out a gush of relief when I found nothing underneath it.

"Oh God," I said and quickly took my rosary near my bedside table. I am praying and asking forgiveness to what I just dreamed about.

This was the first time it happened, and it's scary and sinister.

What is this? Why is this happening to me.

Ever since I saw that doctor, I've all this troubled and can't focus on anything. I even got scolded a lot of times because of my constant zooming out of everything.

I sighed and held my chest, caressing it softly, hoping it would calm myself as I continued to pray and hold my rosary with sincerity, asking for forgiveness in having such sinful dreams.

"Jennie," I flinched when I heard a knock on the door, causing me to drop the rosary in my hand.

"I'm awake," I said to my mother while looking for my rosary in my bed.

"Get ready and changed someone is waiting for you downstairs," my brows furrowed by what I heard.

So far, I don't remember something I needed to do this day.

"Who is it?" I asked

"It's Mrs Manoban's granddaughter. She said her name is Lisa, "my mother replied. That made me gasp as the memories of my dreams hunted me again.

"Oh God help me"

# Chapter 5

Lisa's POV

It was hard, but I was able to find a club that was almost the same as what Jackson owned in Seoul. It's not so big like I was used to, but I think I can manage this.

"You're new here, aren't you?" The bartender asked and served me my drinks, and I could only nod at her as my answer.

She smiled, and her face went closer to me while she whispered something that made me I intrigued

"I have a nice quality of ecstacy just behind that door. You can go there if you want" She said and winked at me, and I only smirked at her and said my thanks and I immediately went inside to the door she said with a drink on my hand.

When I got in, I was not surprised when I saw people already high and have been fucking each other. Having sex in every corner, mostly with everyone.

"Newcomer," I heard someone said and she's raises her glass while walking towards me.

"I need a dope," I shouted to hear ear that made her nod her head and pull me towards the counter.

The place was smaller than the outside, but so far, hell is much worse than this.

All of us all are sinister. We are capable of doing such bad things, stealing, adultery, murder anything. Human are dangerous people because in just one push of their weakness, they will have no choice but to sin, to do such unimaginable things in order to fill that desire of satisfaction.

Specially the people in here, I can't judge them not because I'm one of them but because they have reason to why they are doing this. They don't have a choice but to sin so they can live. Come to think of it, even suicide can perish and be dropped into such a fiery pit and make anyone suffer for taking their own life no matter what reasons they have. So why not make a valuable reason for yourself, like living without rules while you're still alive and when you get to die and go to hell you could atleast say that atleast you're making your life worthwhile , that atleast you enjoyed.

I smirked at my thought as I sniffed the drugs that the woman gave me. My mind immediately left my soul as I experienced this familiar feeling.

My mind was up in the clouds, it feels like I'm falling yet flying at the same time. I'm all confused, and my vision is all blurry as I take the bottle on the counter and drunk it's content filling the thirst on my throat.

Unsatisfied, I pull the woman closer to me as I observe her appearance, she looks decent and fuckable but Jennie, she's much prettier than this.

I laugh when I suddenly remembers her amidst in this sinful act I'm doing.

"Strip," I said, and she didn't need to be told twice as she did it instantly, not caring to the people around us.

She stares at me, trying to be seductive while already naked. Her eyes are begging to be touched, and her teeth have been biting her lips while she holds my face.

I took a drug on the table and put it in her mouth, and I kissed her torridly, sharing the illegal stuff in both our mouths. I groaned when the drug hit me again as I felt weak, and I held her waist for support, pulling her closer to me.

"Turn around," I said and forced her body to bend when she did I what said.

Her ass are all up just a few inches away from my hard cock, I lick my lips while her pussy was dripping in such wetness as it pours down to her legs.

"Please fuck me!!" She shouted as she looks at me begging and I could only smirk in satisfaction and light a cigar in my mouth and put the burn tip to her butt cheek.

"FUCCCK!! WHAT ARE YOU DOING?!!!"she cries and groaned, but she didn't even take the cigar away. Instead, she moves closer to me, wanting more of my cruelty.

"What a fucking slut!" I shouted at her while I open my button and dropping my jeans and underwear revealing my hard dick. I took a condom that was displayed in the counted and ripped it open.

I groaned as I slides it to my shaft as I thought of the certain brunette in my head. Imagining that it was her I've been fucking and not this cheap bitch.

"FUCKKK JENNIEEEEEE!!"

Jennie's POV

"What the hell have been taking you so long. I waited for two hours, "Lisa said while she stood up and went to me.

I looked at her confused while my hands held my bag, gripping it tightly when I felt my chest hammering again. As my dreams from earlier hunted me, I felt embarrassed for having such a sinister dream with this doctor in front of me.

"It's not my fault that you came here unannounced," I replied that made her brows furrowed, then she smirked again as she walked closer to me.

I step back a little when she's just standing a foot away from me. I gulped hard while I tried to look away from her

"Are you talking back to me, Jennie?" She more likely stated, it's like she's saying that how could I dare to talk back to her.

I felt scared honestly, but I tried to mask it and just sighed and was about to walk off, but she held my arm and glared at me.

"Where the fuck are you going?!" She said gripping me tightly.

That made me groaned in pain that made her pull her hand while I look at my arm already red and it feel like it was about to get bruise.

"It's your fault," she said that made me mad at her.

I had enough. I'm giving her so much of my patience because she's a guest in this place, and I'm doing my best to be the most understanding host as a governors daughter.

"How dare yo--"

"Jennie, are you already going? Lisa said that you're going to go to this kid named Lee? Am I right, Lisa?"My mother interrupted while she walked towards us.

"Yes, Mrs Kim," Lisa said, and she's back to being timid again. I'm even surprised that I get to do something that made her show some emotions. Usually, she's just expressionless aside from the smirk that will always appear whenever she does something amusing.

"I apologise that you waited so long because of my daughter," my mother said and hugged my arm while we both looked at Lisa, who had just nodded and didn't say anything.

When I felt some awkwardness surrounding us. I told my mom goodbye and pulled Lisa outside our house.

"You should have at least told me that we are going to Lee's house today," I said and opened the car door and sited inside, and I'm struggling to put my seatbelt again.

I groaned internally until I felt her get inside and help me buckle it.

"Thank you," I said and smiled slightly at her, and she just nodded and again didn't say anything.

While on the road, I just kept glancing at her. She's so quiet today. Well, she was always this silent but not this silent.

"I- ahm, can we stop at the church for a while?" I said while I looked at her, hoping she would at least take a glance at me, but she just nodded and continued driving.

For the whole ride, no one said anything and just sighed and deep breaths can be heard inside the car, until I got bored and decided to take my bible out, but then I remembered Lisa threw it at the backseat.

"It's in my house," I heard her say that made me look at her.

Lisa stared at me, and then I gasped when her hand went to my legs.

I tried to shoved it away, but she held it firmly.

"What are you doing?"I asked

"Giving you entertainment," she said that made my eyes wide, confused by what she meant.

"Just enjoy it. They say physical touch can be a therapy, " she said and continues to carress my skin that made me flinch when it moves closer to my-

"I don't need therapy," I grunted and tried to take her hand off of me.

She can easily do it since I'm only wearing a dress above my knee, because I can't seem to find clothes that I'm satisfied with.

"We're here," she said, which made me look up and notice that we're already in church.

This time, I manage to pull her hand away and hastily open the door and go out. I was catching my breath as I walked towards the church entrance.

When I got inside, I held my chest, trying to calm it down. It's been

beating nervously ever since this Lisa came and cause chaos into my mind.

I looked at my phone and saw that it was Wednesday.

Confession is available on this day of the week. And since I'm already out, I decided that I'll be confessing my sins, especially the dreams I had last night.

I walk inside the confession room. It was dimly lit while the it was designed by sacred images and statues and I went to it and do a sign of the cross and bowed my head before I went to the window and kneels before Father Mark.

I held my chest and sighed deeply. I'm trying to come to senses and focus on what I'm doing.

"Good morning, Father," I greeted and bowed my head, and I saw his silhouette nodded.

I gulped and did a sign of the cross and clasped my hand altogether.

"Bless me, father, for I have sinned. It's been thirty days since my last confession, and these are my sins. " I stopped and closed my eyes.

"I have been lazy lately, lacking with some of my chores and constantly zooming out. I felt guilty for doing it, Father. " I started and thought twice before I said my real reason to this confession.

"And I h-have met this woman, she was 10 years older than me and I- I had a dream of doing such sinful thing with her. I-in my dream, she was down on me, her head was in between my legs, I don't know what she was doing, but I have felt a feeling of arousal and desire of sensuality. It felt unfamiliary good and I admit I have been enjoying it while it was happening that I ended up wanting to reach this point of I don't know but it was such beatiful feeling", I admitted and I felt getting more nervous as the cold breeze of the air-conditioning touches my skin.

"It was very wrong to dream of such sinful thing, but it was out of my control, Father. However, I thought that maybe I was not

praying enough to be away in such sinister dreams, " I added and bowed my head, waiting for his reaction. To what he might want for me to do, to repent and be forgiven for all my sins.

"Father?" I asked and felt scared by his reaction, thought that he might be judging me for what I confess or that he might recognize my voice frightened me, scared that I might get judgements.

My hands are shaking while I continue to wait for his answer.

"Stay there," I heard, and I'm certain that it was not Father Mark's voice. That made my mind panic and tremble in nervousness.

# Chapter 6

Jennie's POV

I quickly run outside the confession room, thinking that someone might catch me and know who I am.

What am I thinking?

Why did I not make sure that it was not Father Mark who was behind that window?

My heart is beating so fast against my chest as I open the door, but then it drops when someone opens it first.

"Lisa? she confirmed when she looked at me. The way she looked, it was like she was amused by something.

Don't tell me.

"Oh God!" I mumbled and quickly got out of the room and ran away when I felt her hand hold my arm.

I stopped and bowed my head, trying my best not to look at her as my face heated in embarrassment at what I confessed. Even though I didn't say a name, there's no other woman to whom I was referring. We just met, and she knows my age and that she is ten years older than me.

My god, what am I doing with my life?

I felt her hold my face, forcing me to look at her, but I kept on moving my body, wanting to let go of her grip.

Until Lisa groaned and held my arm, shaking my body, that made me stop, but still, I'm not going to look at her face.

I would never

"Look at me," she said, but I didn't do what she told me and just continued bowing down.

"I said, look at me," she said again, already losing patience as her words came out with so much force.

And I only shake my head again to disagree.

"Fuck! Why are you so stubborn?!" she asked, and I breathed in relief when she took her hands away. This time I look at her as she brushes her hair with her fingers with furrowed brows, irritated by how I'm acting.

Then she looked back at me, which made me scared. I was about to run away from her, but she caught me again, and this time she was already holding my face, forcing me to look at her.

My heart hammers in embarrassment and nervousness, and I don't know, there's this weird feeling inside my tummy whenever I look at her eyes.

I saw her smirk and hold my face with both hands while she stared at me seriously. Her brows furrowed as her face came so much closer.

"What you confessed inside that room. Can you tell me more about it?" She said, which made my eyes go wide, surprised by what she wanted.

"No!", I said and tried to shove her away, but she held me firmly.

"If you won't, then I'll be going to do it with you. For real." That made my heart drop, scared by what she said.

Then her face went closer to my ear, whispering something.

"I could be down on you, right here, and right now, Jennie. My head in between your legs, giving you a real feeling of desire that you wanted to reach. I bet you don't know what an orgasm feels like, but don't worry, I'll be willing to make you experience that. While my tongue is buried inside on your pretty tight cunt, exploring its innocence and diving its wetness," she mumbled so

dark and serious that it made me gasp and hold her shirt for support, that I somehow felt weak by what she said to me.

It was all so vulgar and dirty, and I should be pushing her away, but why am I not doing it? Why am I seeking more words from her?

"Jennie!", I flinch and push Lisa away from me before Father Mark comes to us.

"Good morning, Father," I greeted and bowed at him; he did the same while Lisa was just standing and waiting. I never saw her bow to anyone or show respect to them. I guess she's that personality I saw in some movies, acting cold and mysterious. If so, she's really good at it.

Father Mark looked at Lisa and me, his brows furrowed, confused as to why we were together.

"She's Lisa; she's Mrs. Manoban's granddaughter, and we were about to go to Lee's house, but I stopped by in the church first", I explained, which made him nod his head and smile at Lisa.

But the latter only nodded her head and stood close to me. I saw how Father Mark's face tried to hide his grimace, which made me embarrassed by how Lisa is acting.

"I'm sorry she's not that sociable," I explained on her behalf, and Father Mark smiled at me, understanding the situation.

"Right, I'm glad I saw you here because I needed help, Jennie", he said, gesturing to the line of people outside.

"I have an important file that needs to get into the basement; somehow Irene put a file in there and didn't know how important that was, and she's not here to find it for me, and I can't get to do it either because of the people who needed to confess their sins," he explained, and I nodded eagerly, understanding his point.

"Of course, Father", I said and bowed at him before I hurriedly ran away from both of them, especially Lisa.

Ever since she came, my mind has never been at peace; even my

heart keeps pounding very loudly whenever she comes so close to me, and even her presence gives me nothing but trouble.

Lisa, she's nothing but trouble; even if she's a doctor and all, I could sense that she was this person that I needed to get away from. Even the way she talks and easily curses whenever she's irritated, and even her words are all sinister and provocative. I don't even know what she could mean, but somehow I could still know what she meant it's because of the way she said it.

She's a big sinner and a troublemaker, and I should not be going around with someone like Lisa. She's so different from me, and maybe after we get to visit Lee's home, I will never see her again, or at least I won't be close to her presence.

And earlier, no one had ever said those dirty words to me. I was treated with respect, and Lisa was the only person who dared say something so sinful like earlier. Let's say she's older and already has her own career ahead of her, but who is she to talk to me that way? I'm so innocent, and my purity is forever and will not be tainted in such a word of lustful content.

"Hey!", I flinched and quickly ran away from someone who just talked, but that someone already held my waist and pulled me closer towards

Wait, this perfume is so familiar.

"Lisa?", I confirm and look at the person's face, and I did not make a mistake. My heart quickly pounded again in nervousness when I made sure that it was her.

I hastily step back and look at her confusedly.

"Why are you following me?", I asked, but she only looked at me smugly and took a seat on a chair beside her. Her legs are crossed, and she stares at me.

"You're being delusional, aren't you?" She said instead, which made my mouth gape open.

"How dare you say that!" I shouted, already losing patience with her

and her presence.

"Where is this attitude coming from? I thought you wanted to be a nun and yet this", she gestured my whole body with her hand and looked at me, insulting me with her eyes.

I felt a little pain from what she said, but somehow I found it real. I don't want to be angry with anyone; I'm scared of how they might feel if I do that, and it's also bad to get angry with anyone; that's one of the virtues of our God, one must be forgiving Bo matter the reasons are.

"Anyways, I came here to tell you that the file that you'll be needing is the list of the kids that needed to be baptized this year; that's what the priest told me", Lisa said as she looked at one of the folders that was near her.

I felt so guilty for what I did and how I acted that I bowed my head and sighed loudly.

"I'm sorry", I apologized, which made her stop and look at me.

Lisa smirked, put the folder back down, and sited properly.

"I didn't know that you apologized,", she said, but I only shook my head.

"I'm not usually like this. It's just your presence is making me uncomfortable", I admitted, and this time she did not smirk, but her smile broke out, which made me look at her surprise.

My heart flutters when her teeth show up, her eyes glisten, and the curve on her lips makes her more beautiful.

I blinked, unsure of what I was seeing, but I gasped for the nth time when she was already standing in front of me. Just a foot away from where I'm standing, her face is back to being expressionless again.

"You don't have to apologize if you think you did nothing wrong", Lisa said seriously while she continued to stare at me, our gazes locked together.

"But I'm at fault, am I?", I asked, and her head nodded in agreement that made me sighed, but I flinched when she touched my face again.

"Don't apologize for being you, Jennie; you're just expressing yourself. You're mad because I followed you, then be mad, and I know you just thought of it because I'm annoying you in some way," she explained sincerely while she carress my face with her thumb.

"But Jennie, I think I won't be able to stay away from you. Even if you push me away or try to ignore me, I will always be there to do something towards you," she added, which made me look at her seriously.

She smiles again and moves closer towards me; now her face is just a few inches away from mine.

My eyes look down at her lips, which curve in such a beautiful way. My heart beats madly as I continue to look at it; somehow, it feels like it's pulling me closer to push my own lips against hers.

Then suddenly we heard a rustling of the door being opened, and I acted on impulse by pulling Lisa with me as we hid behind the dark space of the cabinet.

I quickly put my hand on Lisa's mouth, stopping her from making a sound while we both hid in this tiny space.

"Jennie? Father said that you're here trying to find the file, and I thought you might need a hand", I heard Irene's voice with her footsteps walking closer towards where we are hiding.

My heart continues to beat nervously as a feeling of paranoia invades my system. I am anxiously thinking about what may happen to us if Irene ever finds me with Lisa in this place.

"Oh, it's here. Maybe she already went out after she didn't find this. "I heard her mumbling and a sound of footsteps and the door being closed that made me breath when I confirmed that she's already gone.

"Ehem", Lisa faked a cough, and I didn't know that I was still

covering her mouth. I was about to take it away, but she already did it by shoving my hands. But what shocked me was when she suddenly moved her head closer to me, and I felt her soft lips touch mine.

# Chapter 7

Jennie's POV

I immediately pull away from her as I run outside the place where we are hiding, surprise, and scared to what she did.

"Oh God," I mumbled as I touched my lips, still shocked about what happened.

I felt Lisa move and also go out, and we are now standing so close to each other.

I felt myself starting to get mad, confused, and irritated while I continued to look at her.

"What did you do?!!"I asked and slap her face that made her body froze as she looked at me, surprised to what I did.

Lisa held her face before she stared at me, her brows furrowed while her jaw tightened as she walked closer. Her breath is so loud it feels like she's stopping herself from doing something towards me.

"What? You deserve it!!"I said and was about to walk out, but she held my arm tightly and pushed me towards the wall, cornering me with both her arms.

"Didn't I tell you, that if you won't tell me more about what you confess earlier, I'm going to eat your virgin cunt and do this sexual things with you", she said, grunting, her eyes are flaming with anger.

I'm staring to get scared of what she's acting as I look away, but she held my face firmly, and my eyes went wide when her face moved closer towards and pressed her mouth against mine.

My heart beats abnormally while I kept grunting and moved my body away from her, but she held me firmly. Her right hand was in

my face while the other was tightly gripping my waist.

"St-stop," I said, but she didn't. Instead, she took this as an opportunity to invade my mouth with her tongue that's made me gasp and hold her shoulders for support.

I felt how she licked my lips, how she forced my mouth open, and how her tongue explored the inside of my mouth. All of what she is doing is making me weak and flustered, confused, and a feeling of sudden arousal surge inside me.

"Lisa", I said and tried to kiss her back as I get lost with all this kisses and touches, I move my lips together with hers, as I taste her mouth that was mix with cigarette and mint.

"Hmm," I let out a sound when she suck my tongue while her hand on my waist already went down to touch my legs as I flinched when she carress it with her warm hand.

I hug her shoulders tighter while I whimpered because of her touches, my eyes involuntarily closed because of her kisses, it's making me lose control of myself as my center is seeking for some attention until I can't ignore it and rubs my self against her.

"Jennie," she said, surprise to what I did, that made us both stop and look at each other while we caught our breath.

"What did you do to me?"I asked, breathless while I continued to hold her shoulder, caressing it slightly.

But she didn't answer me. Instead, she kissed me again, and this time, I was eager to kiss her back, trying my best to follow her movements until we had already kissed in sync.

I heard her groaned when my tongue inserted inside her mouth, I whimper as I explore it and she could only express loud breathes against her nose as we continuen to kiss, her hands pull me closer towards her body while I encircled my arm around her nape, wanting her to get closer.

We tilted our head in a heated kiss while her hand went slowly to my centre, wanting to touch something forbidden.

"Lis!"I stopped her as I bowed down my head, confused about what I'm doing.

This isn't me

I'm supposed to be a young teenage girl to be enrolled in a convent of nun after this summer.

But why am I kissing a woman I barely met? Why am I letting her touch and hold me like this.

"Don't you dare tell me to stop," I heard her say that made me look up and shiver on the way she looked at me.

Her gaze is penetrating my soul, it so dark, but you could see the want and lust behind those eyes, and I'm not even scared nor felt molested.

Seriously,what's with her that I can't seem to know myself?

"I- I don't know why, but I don't want you to stop Lisa," I said while I seriously looked at her. Her pupils dilated while she stared at me and held my face with her both hands.

"Tilt your neck," she said as I looked at her supirsed, but nevertheless, I did what she wanted. Her face moves closer , and her breath touches my neck, which makes me whimper and holds her arm for support.

I felt weak as my knees weakened by her intrusion. My eyes instantly closed when I felt her soft lips touch my skin, and I gasped loudly when she suck it. My breath came out so loud, trying to fight an overwhelming feeling of arousal.

"You're mine, Jennie. No one can have you other than me, "she said while seriously looking at me, and I could only nod in agreement while I submessively let her do what she wanted.

---

"Princess, your mother and I decided to where you finally going to enter a covenant," my dad brings up as we eat our dinner as a

family.

But I can't seem to focus on what they are saying as I thought about what happened earlier. It feels like I sold my soul to a devil, but never did I feel any remorse about what I did.

"Jennie!"I gasped and flinched when my mother touched me as they all looked at me worriedly.

"Are you alright?"they both asked, and I could only nod at them, trying my best to look okay and well.

But I'm not, I'm bothered and I kept thinking to this woman I promise myself with.

"You've been spacing out ever since you came back. Are you really alright, baby?"My mother insisted, and again, I just sighed and nodded at her while my father looked confused about what my mother said.

"Where did you go? I thought you didn't have anything to do today?" My father asked as he continued to eat his meal while I kept playing with my mine.

"Lisa came here, she's Mrs Manoban's granddaughter, she told me that they have an errand to do with this kid named Lee", my mother was the one who answered that made my dad stop eating and look at me seriously.

I don't know why, but my heart hammers against my chest scared to what will about to happened.

"I don't want you to go out with her Jennie", my dad suddenly said that made me stop and look at him confusedly. Even my mother was shocked to what my dad told me.

"Why? I think she's a great kid, well her tattoos kinda make her intimidating but I think she's alright", my mother said but dad only sighed and tap his mouth with the table clothed before he look at us seriously.

"She's a troublemaker. Did you know what people talked about after

she came here? She's hiding because the police have been looking for her, I think she's a convict. "

That made me gasp and held my breath after I learned what my father told us.

"But dad, she's a doctor." I tried to defend her, but he only sighed and looked at me seriously

"I don't care who she is Jennie just don't come near her again. She's a dangerous woman, I think you already know that," he dismissively said and walked out .

While I didn't know that my hands were gripping my utensils tightly. Kinda hurt to what he talks about Lisa, I guess she has that attitude of criminal, and she is really not well mannered, but she won't go far to be a real one. Right?

"Don't mind your dad and just finish your meal baby", my mom interrupted my thoughts, and I just sighed and smiled slightly at her, losing my appetite because of what we just talked.

---

I was washing up for bed when I heard my phone ding, I slowly reached over my phone and looked at the message while I continued to take a bath.

[9:20pm]

Lisa:

Where are you?

I stared at my phone, unsure of what I'll respond after I had seen her text.

I'm taking a bath

I just replied and continued to washed myself when I heard my phone again.

Send me a nude pic of yourself

I read her message that made me gasp and suddenly got conscious and nervous as I looked around my bathroom, paranoid because of what she had just said. What is she thinking?

No

That's what I replied, and I didn't get another text from her since then.

I'm all dressed for bed and lay down comfortably, but I kept looking at my phone, waiting for her reply as I scrolled throughout our conversation.

But then I suddenly got surprised when it suddenly rang and my phone fell on my face. I groaned in pain as I answered the call.

"Get out," I heard Lisa say over the phone that made my eyes went wide, confused as to what she meant.

"What?"I asked, and I heard her sighed loudly. It feels like losing patience with me.

"I'm outside your house," that is what she just said and ended the call.

When I realised what she meant, I quickly got up in my bed and ran through my vanity mirror and looked at myself, trying to do a little retouched before I decided to get out and there -

I saw her leaning on a motorcycle while wearing a black leather jacket and white shirt, with her tight ripped back jeans and white shoes. My heart suddenly fluttered as I saw on how good-looking she was.

I admit she doesn't really look like 28 years old, and even the way she is dressed, she is more like a teenager with family issues, just like in the movies.

Lisa went to me, and I gasped when she suddenly held my face and kissed me suddenly in this open place. Even the guard was still

outside my house.

"Lis," I pushed her away, but I held her arm and pulled her towards the side of the gate, this is a blind sopt away from our cctv and guards.

When I made sure that we were safe, I heard her chuckle and hold my waist and kiss me again while the wall was on my back, trapping me against her arms .

Her tongue invaded my mouth as it explores inside , and I could only open it wider, submessively letting her do what's she wanted.

"Hmm," I let out a sound as she suck my tongue, bit my lips, and continued to kiss me again as we both moved in sync, and our head tilted in a heated kiss.

"What are you doing here?"I asked when she finally pulled out as we both caught our breaths our forehead touches together

"I kept thinking of you,"

My heart pound so fast as I heard those words from her. It feels new and fluttering that she was thinking of me just like I always thought about her.

"And also," she stopped and held my face, her mouth smelled cigarette and mint again.

"I want to fuck you so bad Jennie"

I gasp and look at her, surprised by what she said. No, it's a sin, we are not entitled to do such unimaginable desire.

"No Lisa-", I tried to protest but she already covers my mouth with her own and I could only whimper as I wrap my arms around her nape.

"Let me make you feel how an orgasm was like. Not just in your dreams, Jennie, but in reality, "

I held my breath while she whispered those words to me as my

heart continued to beat nervously, scared to what she might do out in a place like this. But I could also never deny that what my body also wants.

I want her

I wanted her to do such things with me.

# Chapter 8 (M)

Jennie's POV

Her lips touch my neck, as it gives shivers down my spine. I hold her like I'm losing strength, weak by her kisses.

"Lis," I let out a sound as she suck my neck to where she did earlier.

"This will be my evidence that I own you Jennie" I heard her say before she stare at the part of my neck she just sucked, it was located in the back part of my ear, away from the eyes of many people.

Then she stares at me, her gazes that full of desire of sensuality, we both look at each others eyes, both our breath are all deep and loud, together with my restless heart because of her presence, because of what she's doing to me.

"Why am I allowing you to do all this?"I asked while I gently carress her nape, straightly looking at her.

But Lisa only smirks and touches my lips, parting it slowly as she continues to look at it.

"You should know the answer by now Jennie", she said, and then her gaze went to my eyes, penetrating my soul again.

Then my gaze followed her hand, and as it went down to my shirt and there, she inserted her hand inside as it touched my skin, making me whimper as I closed my eyes.

"You're so sensitive," she whispers in my ear as she continues to carress my skin while blowing a warm air into my ear as I let out sensual breaths.

My head was bowed down while I let her do what she wanted as she explored my back and stomach, touching me sensually while I

weakly held her for support. Until her other hand went to my face and held my chin, guiding me to look at her.

Her eyes are so dark, glistened with passion and desire.

"Lisa," I said her name before her lips touched mine. I close my eyes at the contact, pulling her much closer to me, my arms wrap around her nape as I kiss her with so much want.

Both kisses are fighting for dominace but in the end I was helpless, I got succumb by her touches and kisses that I could only whimper and let out loud sound of sensual breathes as she continue to do things with me.

"Take off you shirt", I heard her say, and I was so puzzled and confused by my emotions and desire that I helped her take my upper clothes. I saw how her eyes widened in suprise by the discovery.

It was all dim and dark in this place, but I knew she could see vividly what was in front of her.

"I- you know I was about to sleep", I tried to explain while the cold breeze touches my skin that made me shiver and hold her her tighter, pulling her much closer to me also embarrassed that she see me like this.

I felt her hands touch my waist, hugging and gripping my skin while I felt her kisses on my neck, which made me close my eyes and let out heavy sounds of breath

"Ahhmm," I can't finally stop when she licks my earlobe and softly bit it as my nails scratches her nape, wanting for support.

"Fuck!! You're making me crazy", she whispered and continue to carress my body and left kisses in every part of my neck, and I could only tilted my head to give her full access on everything.

I gasped when she suddenly kisses the hollow part of my chest, her warm breath is making me shiver. While I hold her head as it moves towards my sensitive mound.

"Goood", I let out, my eyes are tightly closed while my mouth is parted open, surprised by such beautiful feeling of pleasure when she suddenly kisses my nipple and my other mound was gently caressing with her hand.

"This - this i-is so wr-ong Lis", I tried to say but I could only felt her smirk in my chest as she continue to lick and suck my breast and made me let out loud gasp and moans of pleasure.

"God forgive us," I unconsciously said as I kept pushing her for more, seeking such pleasure that I only experienced with her.

I heard her chuckle as she moved her head to the other and gave me the same pleasure. It's all so good, so passionate that I kept gripping her hair, wanting more.

Until I pull her away and kiss her hungrily, already succumb by lust and desire as my tongue torridly went inside her mouth sucking her own breathes and groaned as she continue to touch me, and our body touches so closed as we moves in sync, trying to find pleasure with our center.

"I'm so hard," I heard her say that made me surprised and pulled out, confused by what she said. But she didn't talk nor say a word. She just took my hand and put it on her centre as I gasped by what I discovered.

Her groaned was so loud as I continued to carress it's hardnesss, on how long and thick it was that I could barely properly touch it.

"Lis," I said her name, but she only groaned and kissed me again. My hands were above me, locking it together with hers.

I kiss her with so much hunger, mouth widely open, eyes are tightly closed as our body moves in sync, both our centre touches, humping into each other, wanting that friction to collide.

"Lis~ oh Lisa", I let out as my head is buried on her neck as she continue to hump me, her hard manhood brushes my sensitive center, making me whimper, wanting that familiar feeling I felt in my dreams.

"Oh Gooood~", I moan out loud that made her kiss me hungrily, shutting my mouth with hers, as she suck my moan and breathes away, until I got lost and hold her shoulders for support as my body shakes and my eyes closed tightly.

"OOHHHMYGOOOODNESSSS LISAAAAAA!!"I shouted her name as the feeling of pleasure of an orgasm that she's talking about took my body, as it continued to make me go wilder and weak but overwhelmed by such feelings, somehow wanting more.

"I want more!!"I said and kissed her hungrily again, trying to regain my strength, and I heard her groaning and a zipper being open.

"Fucking hell!!", she said and let out her manhood and I could only gasp in surprise by what I saw.

It's so veiny and long and I got shocked on how could it be so thick but my thoughts was cut off when she put my hand around it and pump it herself, and a feeling of arousal hit me again as she moves my hand so much faster, her groaned echoes in the place in where we are hiding while her head is tilted in a pleasured way, while straightly looking at me, biting her lips as her face express pleasure and delight.

Until she pull her hand and encouraged me to pump it harder on my own and so I did, I hold it and kneel before her while I continue to move my hand, while I look closely as it parts and anatomy, curious to what it looks like.

"Yes shit!! Fuckkkk!!!", Lisa groaned as white sticky substance goes out from her tip and it slides through my hand that I panic and pulled my it away but I gasp when she kiss me again and she hold my waist securely.

We kiss in so much hunger and desire as I wrap my arms on her nape again, wanting more from her.

"God! Th-this is so wrong, but why does it feel so good? "I manage to say between our kisses that I heard her chuckle and kiss me more while I could only whimper in delight as my knees grow weaker when her hands go to my buttocks .

I shriek and gasp loudly when she pinches and pulls it closer towards her hard manhood again, making our centre touch and grind, wanting the familiar pleasure again.

"JENNIEEE!!"I gasped and pushed Lisa when I heard my dad's voice.

Then it just hit me about what we did.

What have I become?

"Oh my God", I said and hastily took my shirt and wear it and I quickly arranges my hair with my shaking hands as my heart beats nervously, scared that my dad will come and discover what I'm doing out here.

I heard Lisa's pants being zipped and a sound of footsteps walking closer towards us.

"Lisa," I said her name in panic when I felt my dad's presence getting closer to us.

She gestured me to shut my mouth, and I could only nod as my tears fell. Panic consumed me.

"Shh, it's okay, I'm here," she said and buried my head on her chest, trying to calm me down as our heart beat hammers together.

"Follow me," I heard her say and pulled me as we walked around the gate, and I could only do what she said as my tears continued to fall down.

Then I felt a relief when I saw the back gate are open while the lights are all closed.

"Thank you," I said sincerely, even with the dark place surrounding us, I saw how her teeth shines and her face moved closer and gave me a passionate kiss.

"See you," she said and smelled my scent loudly before I pulled her to kiss me again and said our goodbyes.

---

Lisa's POV

When I felt Jennie's dad was no longer around, I quickly went to my motorcycle and was about to start it when I heard a click of a gun behind my head.

It was the first time I felt scared while my heart beat nervously against my chest.

I move my hand up, surrendering to whoever it may be, but I have a hunch to who it is.

"Stay away from my daughter," he said and walked in front of me with still a gun pointing now it's in my forehead.

I look at its hole and gulped hard before I stare at Jennie's father.

He looked so mad with his brows furrowed, and his jaw was tightened in such anger.

"Why?"I just asked as I continued to look at him straightly, masking my fear of what he was doing.

"Why? Damn you!"he spat and point the gun much closer towards me.

"Are you seriously asking me that?!!"he added and gestured in pulling the trigger that made my heart beat doubles in fear.

"Yes," I said coldly and was about to take the gun away from me, but he pushed it much harder that it had already touched my skin while his gritting his teeth, already losing patience.

But I could not just let him feel that he intimidated me. No one can make me feel that way. No matter who they are, I won't ever let them see me weak and fragile.

"She's just a teenager Manoban, I've been trying my best to keep her innocence in the best way I can and you? You're just going to ruin it?!!"he grunt while his eyes are full of anger towards me.

While I just look at him, I am unsure of what to say. I can't just stay

away from Jennie, can't I? I already had plans for her , my conquest on how I get her to want me, to seek me, to need me.

And this? Her father threatened my life in order to leave her daughter alone? I don't think so.

"You want me to leave your daughter?, sure let's see if she won't hate you", I said before I took the gun from him and throw it away before I start my motorcycle and leave him behind.

You just made your daughter and brought her to this world, and that was the biggest mistake you have ever made.

You don't own her

She's mine.

---

Bad girl Lisa, lol

# Chapter 9

Jennie's POV

It's been 2 days since something happened with Lisa and I, and also, ever since that day I have never had contact with her, no phone text or calls and I didn't see even with just a glimpse of her.

At some point in my life, this was the time that I regretted the most, and I thought that she was just playing with me and my innocence.

My chest ached, seeking her presence. I wanted her to talk and at least see me for a moment. But after those two days that passed by, she was not around and left me overthinking to why she would dare to mess up my life , I'm just a young teenager who knows nothing about her.

"You've been spacing a lot lately. Are you sure you're okay?"Irene said as we arranged the things needed for tonight's mass.

It's my schedule to be the cantor while Irene will be the lecture. We change parts as we go on with our schedule, it was quite a hassle today because I have never been myself and always lost on focus but I needed to do my job and serve the LORD, especially that I have done such sinful things, I dint know I could do.

"Yes," I just said and smiled at her as the bell rings, indicating that the Holy rosary has been done and it will be the start of the mass.

We walk through our designated seat as we wait to Father Mark to arrive at the altar.

We sang the intro with bliss and sincerity as my heart felt joyful as I continued to serve my saviour.

"Allelujah! Allelujah, " I sang, but stop in the middle as I saw Lisa standing at the corner of the church while intently looking at me.

My heart starts to beat madly as I lose focus on what I'm supposed to do as I continue to stare at her, wanting to hold her at some point.

"Jen!"Irene said and pulled me to kneel as the mass began.

"Irene I - I think I'm not really feeling well. Can you cover up for me?"I whispered in her ear, as guilt took over me when I lied to her.

Her brows furrowed and touch my neck, confused to what I said because I never did try to give her my part, even when I'm sick before I will still do my best and finish my lecture.

"Okay, I'll just explain to them that you're sick. I'm sure they'll understand, "she agreed, which made me breathe in relief, thankful for what she said.

I continued to kneel before Father Mark instructed us to stand and do a sign of the cross, and I hastily went out trying to act that I'm really sick as I held my head.

When I made sure that they can't be able to see me, I ran through the back and looked to where Lisa was standing earlier.

Then, a feeling of disappointment washed over me when I didn't see her to where she was. I was about to go back inside and pack my things and decided to go home when I felt someone pull me in a secluded space.

I wanted to squel and ask for help when I felt a familiar lips pressing against mine.

My heart started to beat louder again as I kissed her back with the same passion, pulling her much closer to me while my arms were wrapped around her shoulder.

"Hi," she said while catching her breath and holding my face, staring intently at me, and her arms were wrapped around my waist.

I could only stare at her. Unsure of what to do. I wanted to get mad at her for ghosting me, and after two days, she just poof out of

nowhere and kissed me here in this dark place.

Instead, I just smiled slightly and pulled myself away from her. I don't know why, but I'm upset about how she's treating me.

"Is there a problem?", she asked and tried to hold me again but I only sighed and was about to walk away but she pulled me and pushed me to the wall behind, securing me with her arms and as always, I'm trapped like a prisoner.

"I'm asking you!"She groaned and held my chin, forcing me to look at her. And I could only sighed and tried to mask my fear when I saw her jaw tighten.

"Jennie!!"she whispered-shouted, grunting while glaring at me. That I lost it and pushed her away.

"You're the problem, Lisa!! After the night that have happened to us you left me hanging with all this negative thoughts entering my head", I burst out together with my tears as it fell down my eyes, hurt to the way she's treating me.

But what am I thinking? She's Lisa, that's who she is, just like how other people view her.

In those past days, my dad told me to stay away from her, even to the point that he tried to take my phone so that he could be sure that I won't be contacting her, thankfully my mom was there to stop him, but still even if he wasn't able to take my phone away there was no Lisa who texted nor called me after that night.

And not to mention the thought that I have become one of the girls she used and left hanging as gossips around the town spread on how a womanizer she is.

"Jennie," she said and tried to wipe my tears away, but I shoved her hand and ran away from her, taking my bag and belongings.

I waited in the road and tried to stop my tears from falling, but still, it fell down endlessly while I waited for a taxi to drive me home. It was usually my driver who will the one to drive me anywhere since I still don't have my license, but in this moment, I need to get away

from here as soon as I can.

"Jennie, come on, I'll take you home," she said and parked her motorcycle and went to me, but I still didn't mind her and kept waiting for a taxi to come.

"Hey," she said and tried to hold my hand, but I shoved it away. However, she's much stronger than I am , and she was able to pull me towards her vehicle and force me to sit.

When she thought that I had settled, I immediately stood up, which made her groan in annoyance and stared at me seriously. Her patience was wearing thin.

"If you don't do what I say. I'm going to fuck you right here and now!!", she shouted that made me gasp and cover her mouth and by the way she said it, I know she's not kidding.

I look at her wide eyes, surprised to what she's acting.

"God help me", I mumbled and sighed in defeat and settle myself on her motorcycle, confused on how to ride it.

"You never rode one before?", she asked while she help me settled and put a helmet on my head.

And I just nodded my head as an answer, scared that she might do stupid things again.

"Hold my waist," she said when she got settled on her own, and I did what she wanted, moving closer towards her. Her perfume invaded my system with a bit of a smell of cigarettes that came from her shirt.

Lisa started the vehicle and drove off, and I just breathed loudly, trying my best not to be scared. Maybe she felt my hands trembling while holding her waist that she slowed down and cups my hand, caressing it softly.

"It's alright, I'm not going to let you fall", she mumbled as she tried to look at my side, trying to make me calm and somehow that made me heart in peace as she droves carefully.

"Where are we going?"I asked when I saw an unfamiliar road ahead of us. My heart beat in fear as we drove through a dark and secluded highway.

"This is not the way to my house Lisa", I shouted to her ear, thinking that she might not be able to hear me because of the loud noise that her motorcycle made.

"Just trust me, we're not going home yet", she answered and that statement made my heart at ease, while I look around the place that we passed but still the feeling of fear lingers inside me.

--

We arrive in a small bamboo hut while the place is surrounded by rice fields, and the sound of insects is making more creepy.

"This looks like a horror scene when the girl gets raped and killed to death," I commented when I got off the bike.

Lisa chuckled and held my face. Her smile somehow made the place glow even with the dark night.

"You're watching too many horror movies. It's bad for you, "she said before she guided me inside the hut and helped me settle to its small bed with a mattress.

"Is there electricity in here?"I asked while she was busy opening the window.

"Nope, just my phone as a flashlight but I do have candles too if you want to be more traditional" she tried to joke and sat beside me but I only roll my eyes in how corny it was.

I just watched Lisa take a table and place it in front of us, then she went out again and this time she had takeout in her hand from a famous restaurant in town.

"KFC?"I asked amused and helped her prepare the food she bought.

"Why not?"She chuckled and gave me my utensils and drinks, after that she took something under the bed and she lit the candle and

put it in our table. Making the house illuminated with orange colour.

"For a doctor like you are, you're a cheap date," I teased her as my smile broke out. Feeling happy by this simple gesture of hers.

"Stop bashing me, just eat," she said and was about to eat when I stopped her hand. Lisa looked at me confused, it seem like she's really hungry, but we couldn't just eat without praying, can we?

"Let's pray first," I said to her, but I could only hear her groan and slump her back.

"I'm not Catholic," she said and tried to eat again, but I stopped her for the second time, which made her groan for a again and playfully glared at me.

"Don't lie to me, your grandparents are both Catholic's, and still, no matter what religion you have, we should at least be thankful that we have something to eat," I said firmly. I gestured her to do a sign of a cross, but she's just looking at me amusedly.

"What?"I asked, but she only shook her head and did what I told her. I did the same and closed my eyes, as I prayed for the both of us, blessed because of the food that we were about to eat.

"Amen," we both said as the same time, then she immediately attacks her food, moaning in delight, satisfied with what she's having.

I just smiled and ate together with her, still teasing her for being a cheap date that ended up making me a bad person for being picky.

"No, I'm not, I was just saying," I tried to defend myself, which made her chuckled and pecked my lips.

"I know, I'm just messing with you", she said and that time my heart continues to hammers against my chest, butterflies went wild inside my stomach, while we continue to stare at each others eyes.

--

When we're done eating, Lisa cleaned everything before we both looked at the stars above us outside. The cold breeze touches my skin, making me hug myself

"We should go inside. It's cold in here," she suggested. We both went inside the house as silence occurred in both of us.

"About earlier," she suddenly said while we were both lying in this small mattress. My head rested on her arms while I looked at her.

"It was never my intention not to talk to you for days. Something just came up", my eyes went wide when she explained herself.

"You," I said in disbelief, but she only took my hand and put it on her face while we stared at each others eyes.

"I'm sorry," she said sincerely while I could only close my eyes when her lips touched mine, kissing me softly and passionately as my heart beat in such happiness.

---

I don't wanna spoil but (M) for the next chapter.

Thank you all for reading and the reviews, too. I'll try my best to update as many as I can.

# Chapter 10 (M)

Jennie's POV

"What are you doing to me?"I managed to ask when we both pulled away while trying to catch our breath.

She looks at me with her brows slightly furrowed while an amused smile shows in her face.

"I could ask you the same thing," she answered instead, which made me smile as we kissed again for the nth time.

My head tilted as we moved in sync. Her hands went to my waist as I settled above her, kissing her torridly and passionately while the familiar urge of desire surged in me.

"Lisa," I moaned her name and kissed her harder, my mouth widely open as she inserted her tongue inside my mouth before she caught my own and suck it harder.

I let out the sound of sensual breaths and moans while we kiss hungrily. My mind loses focus, just wanting more of her. More from Lisa.

I lay on her top and settled on her chest, holding her face to kiss her much more, somehow addicted to her soft lips and mouth.

"Shit Jennie", she cursed as she rubbed herself on my centre that I didn't know that was rested against her manhood.

"I- I have a question," I said and pulled away from our kiss and looked at her face. I giggled when I found it all red and flustered while she looked at me seriously.

"What?"she asked and moved in a comfortable position that it made friction with both our centre, making my eyes suddenly closed, while my mouth gaped open as sensual breathes let out my mouth.

"Fuck! stop making that face", she groaned and kiss me back again hungrily while her hips moves, humping both of our sensitive center.

"Wa-wait, Lisa." I tried my best to stop her again, trying to not lost focus because of her kisses.

She let out a groan and rested her hands on my legs, caressing it up and down, then look at me, waiting for my question.

"I- if a girls private part called", I stop and hesitated while I look at her, embarrassed by my question and decided to not continue it but she smiled slightly and encouraged me to go on.

So I sighed and looked at her seriously.

"If a girls private part called c-c-unt, and pu-ssy? What do yo-yours called?"I asked out of curiosity while I stammered in between my sentences, embarrassed by my question.

Lisa bit her lip while she looked at me, trying to suppress her smiles while her brows moved up and down, lowkey teasing me by my question.

"You know what? Don't answer it, " I just said and was about to get off of her when she held me tightly and flipped our position.

She's now on top of me while she's rested in between my legs, her manhood, touches my sensitive centre, while I'm submessively at her bottom.

"Hey, I was just surprised," she said and held my face and looked at me seriously.

"And to answer your question, you can call my friend a dick, cock, shaft, and I could say a pole or a parking meter", she answered proudly that made gasp in surprised and playfully slap her arm.

"Oh God," I said unbelievably, while I looked at her, shaking my head in amusement.

"You know you should try some curses too," she suggested, and I

didn't think twice to disagree.

"No, it's enough that you're doing the cussed-thing while I pray for the both of us", I said that made her laugh loudly, her face became so red as she looks at me, entertained by my answer.

"What's funny?"I asked, but she only sighed loudly and cups my face, moving closer towards me.

"You're really something Jen", she said while her smiles broke out, and I could only look at her, in such amazement on how beautiful she is when she's laughing and smiling.

But my bliss changed when her lips touches my neck, giving it kisses that made me hold her shoulder weakly while I whimper in desire when she lick my neck and I could only tilt my head to give her more access.

"Lisa", I let out a sound as she moves her hips and her hard 'dick' as what she calls it rubs against my 'pussy'.

God, what's this woman have been doing to me.

I whimper as my body shakes and moves, wanting more friction until her lips go to my ear and lick it sensually. That made me close my eyes from the pleasure of sensitivity.

"I'm going to eat you real good Jen," I heard her say, and I felt her hand on the hem of my dress.

"You look good and holy while wearing this uniform but I think it will be better to take it off", she added and I could only get up and help her removed it while I hug myself, embarrassed of my body.

"Don't, you're beautiful, and you have this body that I'm willing to die for. Fucking hell Jennie you don't know how a goddess you are" she added and kissed me hungrily, our gasp and loud moans echoes to this peaceful place.

Her lips went to my neck, licking it down to my collarbone, and I whimper when she suck it, leaving a mark.

"God, Lisa~", I moaned out loud while I held her face, weakened by her intrusion.

"I told you, you can curse. No one will be judging you, "she tried to say as she put kisses in every part of my skin.

But I could only moan her name as an answer, pulling her hair weakly, lost by the pleasure she's giving me.

Then I felt her hand touch my stomach as it slid on my back and unhooked my brassiere swiftly, and I helped her in taking it off of me.

Her mouth gape open in my nakedness while her eyes screams hunger and desire while she continues to stare at me.

"Fuck!!", she cursed before she dives straightly to my sensitive mound as it erected due to the coldness of the place and the warthm that my body produce because of arousement.

"Oh Lisaaa~"

I let out a sound as she plays with my tip, licking it with her tongue, and sucking it with her mouth that I could only roll my eyes in having such pleasure. My hands hold her head, grasping her hair wanting more of what she's doing to me.

"More Lis, moreeee", I scream as my back arched in such pleasures, lost with all my thought as my body surrender in this beautiful desire.

Lisa groaned and held my body tighter, her mouth sucks my skin, leaving marks everywhere before she comes back to my breast and gives pleasure to it again, caressing it, playing my hardened nipple, pulling it with her teeth, while sucking it again with her mouth and her tongue teases it's sensitivity.

"My goodness!!!", I shouted in pure bliss of pleasure while her hands and body slowly go down on me as her kisses slowly travels down to my center, playing with my navel before she put kisses on top of my 'pussy'.

"You're so wet", she commented as she blows her warm breath around it making me whimper and hold her head stopping her from doing it.

"Fuck!! So fucking sensitive" she added before she wink at me and held the hem of my undies,trying to take it off.

"Lisa", I stopped her, holding her handas my heart hammers, scared to what we will be doing.

She looks at me patiently, waiting for my decision until I don't know what happened that I nodded my head, agreeing on what she wanted.

Lisa smiles at me and pecks my lips before she went down and this time, I'm all naked infront of her, the cold breeze made goosebumps appear my skin as we look at each others eyes, wanting the same things.

Just like in my dream Lisa was in between my legs, her head buried in my center while her mouth is wide open, and her tongue teases my -

"What does it called?", I asked while my elbows supports my body, hoping that I could see on what she will be doing.

"This?", she asked and lick that part that made me gasp and suddenly collapse on bed.

"Yes",I just said and hold her head as my body moves closer towards her face, my eyes closed in such pleasure while she continues to lick the part I'm pertaining to.

"It's your clit", she answers while she continue to gives pleasure to it, sucking it in a good way that I could only gasp and let out such sensual breathes.

I only nodded my head in my new learned information, already weak and fragile, succumb by this beautiful feeling.

"This was better than my dream", I confess as I hold her head, pushing her much closer, wanting more from what she's doing to

me.

Lisa chuckled against my sensitivity that it sends vibration to my body that it suddenly shake and whimper, it was like an electricity hit me.

"More Lisa, pleasee~" I loudly beg as my brows furrowed wanting more, and my body arched and my hips moves closer to her mouth.

"Pleaseee", I groaned in impatience wanting that orgasmic feeling.

Then Lisa pulled away from me and look at me seriously. Her mouth curved in a smirk while it was damp in my wetness

"Becareful on what you wish for", she said before she buried her head again and this time, there was no soft kisses, no gently teases but just her and her sinful mouth sucking and licking my innocent virgin cunt.

"Yesss!! Oh Goood!! Yes!!", I shouted as my body arched and my eyes closed while my mouth widely open, moaning out loud in pure pleasure.

"Yes Lisa!! Like that, do it like that!!", I moaned again my head moved left and right unable to take this much pleasure.

"Do it what Jennie?", she teases and pulled away but I didn't let her when I push her more to my sensitive flesh giving her what she wanted to hear.

"Eat me Lis, eat me real good!!", I shouted as she continue to lick my fold, suck my clit and inserted her tongue in the hole I didn't know before.

"YESS!! EAT MY CUNT BABY!! EAT ME LIKE A HUNGRY PERSON YOU AREEEEE!!!", I lost it.

I felt Lisa stop in surprised but nevertheless she continued her conquest and held my body firmly, stopping me from moving as she continue to dives my wetness.

"Oh Goooood", I mumbled as my body starts so shake, about to

reach this beautiful bliss I've been wanting.

"DON'T STOP!!"

"PLEASE DON'T STOP"

"I-I'M ALMOST THEREEEE!!!

I shouted and moves my body frantically , grasping on her hair as sweats drops from my skin, heart beat keep getting louder and louder that I could feel it banging in my chest while I held my breath so close to reach that orgasmic feeling.

-

-

-

"YEESSSSSSSSSSSSS!!! OH MY GOOOODD LISAAAAAAAAAA!!!!!", I shouted as my body trembles in so much pleasure that orgasm took my body, unable to control it that I kept whimpering, shaking and moving due to the familiar feeling.

While Lisa held my legs tightly, her head still in between my legs, prolonging my orgasm more that I could only bit the back of my hand to stop myself from shouting out loud, while my body shakes, unable to take so much pleasure until I'm already pushing her head away.

"God Lisaaa, s-stop I-- I can't, I can't take it anymore", I shouted, breathless while I push her head weakly when she keeps on sucking my center that I'm about to collapse and red dots appears on my vision.

-

"Damn!! That was fucking hot!!!", she said when she finally pulled away while her mouth was all damp with my wetness. My cheeks heated in embarrassment when I remembered what I did earlier.

"Lis", I was about to stop her from kissing me because her mouth

was still filled with my-

I don't know, juices??

"Fuck Jennie!! That was amazing", she said in between our kisses, making me taste myself while our eyes are tightly closed and our mouth moves in sync.

I got lost in sensitivity of pleasure again when I suck her tongue and felt myself starting to get aroused again, my hands went to her pants, unbuttoning it while I also softly carres her dick, just like what she told me.

We kissed in so much hunger and lust that we got lost into oblivion again, her hard manhood touches my nudity, exposing it to another sin when I touch a liquid in her cock that made her groaned and kissed me harder.

Ring~

I gasped and when I heard my phone rings. We both look at it as I got scared and my heart beat nervously when I fathom how late it was.

"Lis", I stared at her eyes, terrified to what we did and also to what will happen as I look at my phone, my dad's name on display, calling me nonstop.

--

3rd update? Summer class is starting so I'm really doing my best.

# Chapter 11

Jennie's POV

My heart has been beating nervously while we are on our way home. I can't even hear the loud sound that Lisa's bike has been making because of how nervous I am.

I didn't answer the call, but Lisa and I decided to head home first, and I will try to explain to my dad about what happened. I'm sure he already knows that I skip tonight's mass in where I'm supposed to be the cantor, but then I lied so just I could talk to this woman I'm hugging with.

Not to mention that something happened to us back in the hut. It was never my plan, but I admit I have been anticipating such actions from her.

I sighed loudly when I realised what I had become. I'm getting lustful, and the thoughts of this desire and pleasure that Lisa can give to me keep on getting in my head to the point that I'm starting to lose interest in the things that I'm always doing and my mind keeps on wondering towards this woman.

"Everything will be alright," I heard her say and touch my hand as she looked at my side , trying to comfort me.

Maybe she noticed my deep breaths and troubled features, and somehow, what she said made my mind a little peaceful.

I just hugged her tighter and smelled the scent from her shirt, and I didn't know why, but it's making me calm and trust her with anything.

When we arrived, I quickly went down and took my helmet off of me and gave it to Lisa. She both put our helmets on her bike before she stood close to me.

"Thank you for this wonderful night," I said sincerely while I looked straight into her eyes, feeling in a bliss of happiness when I remembered how she apologised earlier.

Lisa smiled and held my face , pulling me into a kiss, but then I flinched and gasped when my dad went out angrily.

"Jennie!!!"he shouted, and I felt him holding my arm away from Lisa and hiding me in his back.

I got so scared that my chest started to beat nervously again while I looked at how my dad angrily stared at Lisa and I.

"You!!"he said and pointed a finger at Lisa, his hand shaking in full anger towards her.

While I keep holding his arm, I'm scared of what he will do.

"D-dad," I tried to hold his arm, stopping him, but he just shoved it away and angrily looked at me. His brows furrowed in such frustrations while his eyes stared at me with so much disappointment.

"Get inside!!", he shouted that I step back, scared of what my dad is acting, my tears fell while I look at him, hurt to the way he's treating me, but I can't never really blame him because I did something so wrong.

"I said get inside!!!"he shouted again, and I could only close my eyes while he groaned, frustrated by my actions.

"Get inside Jennie," Lisa intervened, which made me look at her, concern to what my dad would do to her if I left her like this.

"Get inside now!!!"My dad said again that I could only nod my head, no choice but to agree to what he wanted.

I stared back at Lisa again, and she just showed me a small smile, and that at least assures me that she will be okay.

---

Lisa's POV

"I told you to stay away from her Manoban!! Why do you keep on coming towards my daughter!!" He shouted when he made sure that Jennie got inside their house.

Pathetic!

I just look at him bored, unsure of what to do with his madness on how protective he is towards Jennie.

It's so suffocating, and I even felt how his daughter feels trapped like a prisoner on how he's been dealing with her.

"Did I ever agree on what you said?" I answered him coldly. Sick of how his acting.

But that made him more frustrated and went to me, holding my collar tightly. His eyes are raging in so much anger while his hands are shaking.

"What. Do. You. Want?!"he said while gritting his teeth, maybe trying his best to not possibly hurt me.

But to answer his question. There is this one thing that I want, and that's his daughter.

I shook my head and forcefully took his hands away from me and tapped my clothes gently, trying to take the wrinkles away, annoying him more before I'll answer him

We stare at each others eyes, wanting different things, his brows furrowed in frustrations, while his eyes we're like begging for me to do what he wanted.

"I want your daughter," I answered him honestly, and I got surpirsed when he punched my face suddenly.

"Fuck!!", I groaned in pain and held my face while I look at him, surprised to what he did. His eyes are raging while glaring at me in so much anger.

"This is your last warning. Please stay away from her, I beg you. Jennie, my daughter, doesn't deserve to see the cruelty of this world. I know you're just playing with her, so please stop it as soon as possible. I'm just being a father to her Manoban and I don't want to hurt my child, she's so innocent from all of this stuff" he explained while his eyes were begging , begging for me to leave his daughter alone.

But I'm not going to do what he wanted.

"Don't you think she's a little old to be protected like this? She has a life, Taylor, there is nothing you can do about it, "I said to him, but he just shook his head, not wanting to accept my advice.

"Everything was doing all good until you came here, Manoban. She was about to enter a school for nuns after this summer. She was just like an angel, giving sacred lectures in holy mass and but-you!" He pointed his hand at me seriously.

"You ruined everything. I don't care whoever you are but I am Jennie's father and I will do what I think will be the best for her", he dismissively added before he walk out and aggressively called the guards to lock the gate, I even heard him talk on how I'm banned from entering their home.

"Fucking asshole!!", I cursed as I held my lip and found a little blood from my hand which made me groaned internally before I rode my bike and left.

---

"I think your father is sick in the head", I told Jennie over the phone. She called me after I washed up and feeling sorry about what happened.

I heard her sighed and a rustling sound maybe coming from her bed before she answered me.

"He just wanted me to be safe"

That made me stop and grip my phone tightly.

"Do you think I can do any harm to you?", I asked that the line went silent.

I went out in my veranda and lit my cigarette to help me calm my nerves. I'm so frustrated about what happened that I can't even rest my mind.

Sighing in satisfaction while I exhaled the smoke out of my mouth still I waiting for Jennie's answer but all I can hear is just her deep breathes, and I could even feel her contemplating on saying something.

A feeling of disappointment filled in me when she can't answer my question.

"Both you and your father thought the same Jennie. I can't believe you", I added and turn off the call.

No matter how a douchebag I am, I don't go that far in hurting a woman.

I just held the cigar in between my fingers while I continue to stare the view from the outside when my phone suddenly rings and I quickly answered it thinking that it was Jennie but I only groaned when I heard different voice.

"Lis, this is Seulgi. I found a place just like in Seoul, you know the thing when you wanted to cool off and I'm already here. I'll text you the address", she just said and I only look at my phone, unsure of what to do when I saw a message with the address she's talking about.

---

I arrived in a the address Seulgi sent me, and I can say I my night will be long and eventful.

It's an abandoned warehouse and I could even hear the loud cheering sound of the people from here. I look at my watch before I decided to get inside and Seulgi was already waiting for me.

"Yow! Manoban!!", she called and put her arms around my shoulder

hugging me slightly before she pull me in the middle, in where the noise has been coming from

"I knew you would come", she added and tap my back as we look at the two people fighting each other.

The cheers and applause echoes the place while it was all filled with cigar smoke and dope.

"Are you going to fight?" Seulgi shouted and only nodded at her as a response

I didn't just came here to watch. I wanted to blow some steam off on what Jennie made me feel.

Damn! That girl has been messing with my head.

"Okay, I'm going to list you right now!!"she excitedly said and left while I looked at this man who had been brutally kicking the person his been fighting with.

The blood in his face has been pouring out endlessly, while his mouth opens while lying in his stomach, taking the inflected pain, grunting loudly.

"Stupid," I just said and quickly took my jacket off of me when I saw Seulgi's signal and run towards me.

Her smile never left her face while excitedly holding my things, including my phone and wallet.

"I'm going to kill you if you'll snatch my things." I tried to joke, which made her laugh.

"And I'm going to kill you if you'll lose in this match. I've bet my car in this Lis, " she warned before she pushed me in the centre.

The loud gasp spread around the place maybe surprised that a skinny bitch like me wanted to fight in this kind of place.

But what choice do I have? I wanted to get rid of this thoughts that's been bothering me.

"We have a new challenger!!!", the host shouted and went to me, he even pointed his mic into my mouth wanting me to say something but I just turned it down and look at the person who enters.

As expected it was a man, he's buff and he look strong, long hair and beard while sweats drops endlessly through his skin. He looks like filled with grease from a wrecked old car on how shiny he looks because of the sweat and oil his body produces.

"Disgusting," I just said, and I didn't know that the mic was still on my mouth that made the people laugh and mock my supposedly enemy.

He groaned angrily and maybe felt insulted before he went to me and tried to punch my face. Thankfully, I dodged it and pushed him to the ground , and the people laughed again.

My smile broke out as the thought of playing with this man enters my mind.

He stood up while his brows furrowed angrily, his teeth gritting, and his jaw tighten already fed up by what I'm doing.

I winked at him and gestured my hand to come and try to hurt me, mocking him more.

Which made him run towards me again and keeps on punching and kicking me the best he can but I just kept on dodging his attacks and I even run across the fighting ground just to taunt him more until I made a mistake and he was able to kick my stomach.

"Fucking hell!!", I groaned and cursed as I touched the place he kick, frustrations enters my system on how stupid I was.

"Come on Lis!! Stop playing!!", I heard Seulgi shouted which made me roll my eyes before I look at her but then my heart starts to beat in fear when I saw Jennie's worried face staring at me and her eyes glistened while her tears are about to fall.

"What the hell is she doing here?"

# Chapter 12

3rd Person's POV

Lisa's heart continues to hammers against her chest the longer her gaze locks with Jennie. Both of them felt scared and worried for each others situation.

While Lisa's supposedly enemy look at her in full of wrath and punch her face while she's losing focus and not in her usual self which made Jennie gasp worriedly and was about to run to Lisa when Seulgi catches her hand.

"Where are you going? Stay here," she said and pulled her back to where they were standing.

Lisa's enemy noticed what happened and saw how Lisa's emotions changed when the brunette made her presence known.

He grinned as he thought about how to taunt the woman in front of him. He grabs Lisa's collar and throws her on the ground, and kicks her stomach, which makes Lisa whince in pain and curl her body, hoping to protect herself.

"Manoban, what the fuck is wrong with you?!!!", this time Seulgi shouted, confused to why her friend is not fighting back.

"I'm going to make you suffer for making fun of me", the man said angrily while clenching Lisa's shirt but the latter just only smirk while she's already spitting blood from her mouth.

"It's not my fault that you're a disgusting pig!"she insulted, which made her enemy lose it patience and punched her face with so much force.

Jennie flinched every time Lisa got hit, and her chest tightened, worried for the doctor that she wanted to just run and protect her,

but who was she kidding? She can't even free herself from the hold of Lisa's friend.

"I'm going to kill you bitch!! And after I'm done with you I'm going to fuck the shit out of your girl!!", and that's the time Lisa glared at him in anger.

She's not fighting back because she doesn't want Jennie to see her getting violent, but if her safety will be the cause of it, she's willing to be a criminal just to make her safe.

After he said those words, Lisa looked behind the guy and found Jennie's worried state, her eyes that are full blown crying and her teeth that has been biting her lips just to stifle her sob made Lisa's heart pounded in all worry.

"Fuck yourself pig!!", she shouted and bang her head against her enemy which made him groaned and held his head, his vision starts to get dizzy and Lisa took this opportunity to stand and grab his collar and this time she was the one who was punching him endlessly.

Lisa's heart pounded against her chest. It was beating so much louder and louder as she shouted in annoyance, beating the man who tried to talk that way to Jennie.

However a feeling of confusement came over her, she did not understand herself because before she doesn't give a damn to anyone even they are getting molested infront of her but with this certain brunette, she have the urged to hurt anyone if they'll thought of her in such way.

Still not satisfied, she grabs his head and pushes it towards her knee, which made that man stumble on the ground and was about to lose consciousness because of the impact, but still Lisa is not yet done.

She force the man to stand up and with all the strength that she have, she carry the man in her shoulder and forcefully throw him to the ground and this time he was now lying unconsciously, too tired and weak to even react from the pain, however Lisa felt so much

wrath, and anger towards him, that she still ended up kicking the man's stomach as she roars angrily not having the intention to stop, which made the people started pulling her away from the scene.

---

Lisa's POV

"Lis!! Stop it!!"I heard Seulgi's voice as she held my body to stop me from killing this shit. My chest feels so tight in so much anger towards him. That I can't seem to mind if I'll ever be a criminal at this moment.

"Fuck!!", I shouted and glared at the man who was now lying on the ground unconsciously while his face was all covered with blood and bruises, but I couldn't seem to mind his situation whenever I thought on what he said about Jennie.

I forcefully free myself from Seulgi's hold and I spit the blood in my mouth before I went to where is Jennie was standing.

My brows furrowed as I look at her, she's just wearing a pair of pajamas while my jacket was hugging her securely as I look down at her hands when it was shaking while holding my phone and wallet.

I sighed before I walk towards her and held her hand, pulling her outside.

"Lis!", she called me while I'm still dragging her out.

I cant think straight when, I felt how worried I am, questioning myself on how and why she's here.

"It hurts, please stop", she cried and this time I let go of her arm while I glare at her but she only cried and hug me suddenly.

Her sobs and tears went to my chest, vibrating against my hammering heartbeat that was also the same state as hers.

But I don't know why but a feeling of relief came over me as I hug her back and gently carress her head, hoping it will calm her down.

"How did you come here?", I asked when I gently pull her away.

She went silent and her hands went to her face, drying her tears away before she look at the entrance of the warehouse and I'm not that dumb to not understand what she meant.

I felt her hold my hand as she look at it, and her tears fell down again as she tries to wipe the blood and dirt from my fist with her shirt.

While I see her doing that, my heart suddenly fluttered against my chest, how it feels comfortably beat while I continue to look at her worried state.

'What the hell is happening to me?'

---

Jennie's POV

"Jennie",I heard her said my name while she forcefully took her hand away from my hold. That made me look at her and my heart instantly aches when I saw what happened to her face.

It was full of bruises and cuts that was all over her face, even the blood already dried together with the dirt that clings to her wounds, but I could never deny that it didn't even made her less attractive.

I shake my head when that kind of thoughts entered my mind even at this situation.

"Answer me Jennie, how did you come here? Why the hell are you here?", she asked already losing her patience with me on how aggressive she was asking.

After we talked over the phone, I felt guilty on making her feel that I made her think that she have the possibility to hurt me physically but it was never my intention, I didn't really mean what I said. I was just confused with my own emotions and thoughts because all of what was happening to me when she came. All of these are all strange and new specially with the kind of life I'm living before I

met her.

I inhaled deeply before I look at Lisa and held her face gently, my tears starts to build inmy eyes again as I continue to stare at her state.

My eyes involuntarily closed when her hand went to my face and cups it gently, drying my tears away while her head moves closer to me.

"You made me so worried", she confessed while she stares into my eyes which made my heart flutters again with her honesty.

Lisa's head moves closer to me, our lips are about to touch while she gently carress my face with her thumb.

"Manoban!! Here's your cut", we heard her friend shouted which made both of us pulled away.

She came to us and gave the money to Lisa and my brows furrowed as irritation went over me.

Just for the money, she almost let her self killed and get hurt?

"Tell me Seulgi, how did she come here?", my thoughts was cutted off when Lisa talked and asking her friend the question that I couldn't have the strength to answer.

I look away when her friend stares at me, asking for help but I'm also scared of Lisa too.

"We-well your phone keeps ringing alright? And I got annoyed so I ans-answered it then I got so engrossed with your fight that I just keep on answering a-all her questions , until I got surpised when she called again that she's already outside", she stammered while explaining, but her playful grinned never left her face as she tapped Lisa's shoulder.

But I just heard Lisa sighed loudly and I felt her hand hugs my waist securing me by her side.

I unconsciously touched my chest when I felt it skip a beat while I

bit my lips, suppressing my smile.

"Next time. Try not to touch other people's belongings", Lisa said and gave the cash to Seulgi, before she guided me by my waist as we walk towards her bike.

"What about your win?" I asked confused, while she put a helmet on my head.

Lisa stares at my eyes and held my chin, locking our gazed together.

"I don't need money. I just wanted to cool my head after what happened", she answered that made me guilty.

She was about to ride her bike but I stop her and pulls her closer to me, hugging her tightly while I look up at her eyes.

"Jennie", she mumbled my name, maybe surprised to what I did but I wanted to sincerely say sorry to what

I did earlier.

"I'm sorry. I didn't mean to make you feel bad. All of this are just all new to me", I honestly said while we stares at each others eyes.

I felt her body frozen, shock to what I said but nevertheless her hand went to my waist hugging me back securely while she rested her chin on my head.

"Next time, don't go looking for me when you wanted to do or say something", she whispers above me which made me pull away from our hug and I look at her confusedly.

Then Lisa held my face while staring seriously at me.

"Because I'll be the one who will come after you", she added sincerely which made my heart skip a beat for the nth time.

---

When on our way home the heavy rain suddenly poured down on us which made us forced to stop a mini hotel

I told Lisa to go inside first and washed up because her wound might get infected because of the dirt and she seem hesitant at first, because she wanted to help me in checking in but I disagree and force her to go to our room.

"Fine, just use my card," she said as she gestured to me her wallet that's in her jackets pocket that I'm wearing.

That's when I remembered how Seulgi forcefully let me hold all Lisa's things while she pulled me hastily when she fetched me outside the warehouse, fearing that she might miss a scene about Lisa's fight.

I nodded at her because I can't use my own card because my dad manage all my transactions, thankfully I have enough cash to be able to pay the taxi that brought me to the place earlier, even I couldn't believe myself that I went out, without the knowledge of my parents and managed to escaped the with all the guards that have been roaming around.

Lisa smiled and peck my lips first before she went upstairs since the hotel was not as extravagant as what I used to, but so far, it looks clean and modest. It just doesn't have an elevator.

"I just need you to sign this here ma'am", the receptionist said as she guided me on what files I needed to sign before we could totally rest.

"Can I request a first aid kit? We really need it, "I said to her in which she nodded and bowed at me while I just smiled and walked upstairs.

-

"Lisa?"I called her name when I got inside the room, but what welcomes me is the sound of a shower that comes from the bathroom.

I quickly went to the only bedroom they have, thankfully it's big enough to fit two people.

We are not going to stay here for long anyway. We will just have to

wait for the rain to stop, and Lisa will drive me back home as soon as possible. She said I shouldn't do more things that will make my dad get angry at me, and I could only agree with what she said.

When I got settled inside the room, I quickly took off all of my clothes since they were all wet because of the sudden rain.

And goosebumps immediately appear in my skin as the air-conditioning blows cold air that touches my naked body.

I deeply sighed and was about to take a robe when I felt a warm silhouette hug me from behind, protecting me from the cold breeze that was making me shiver and weak.

"Jennie," I heard Lisa say my name while I felt her kiss my nape sensually.

---

Everything is not doing well, that's why I can't update much, but I will try my best.

# Chapter 13 (M)

Jennie's POV

I felt Lisa's warm breath against my nape, and her skin touched mine without any single clothing.

We both stand in the bedroom, all naked while her hands softly carress my waist while giving small kisses into my nape. Her warm breath touched my skin that made me whimper and called her name.

"Lisa," I said while I looked slightly on my back, moving my arms to touch her nape from here, as I carress it just like what she's doing on my body.

Deep breathes came from both of us, as we both hold each others bodies, wanting the same heat and warthm.

Until I involuntarily tilted my head when she licked my nape down to my shoulder, and there she plays with my sensitivity when she suck and bites it gently.

"Hmmm," I let out a sound as she continues what she's doing, her hands went to my navel, down to my center and there, parting my forbidden fruit as she slides her finger.

"Lis!"I moaned her name when I shudder at the sudden sensitivity, my knees buckles as I held her tighter for support.

But she didn't stop, instead she part it with her finger and found my clit and started to slides it with her finger and the sound of wet sticky liquid came from it

"So wet", I heard her whispered to my ear and gently bit my earlobe, lick it down until she bit my neck and suck it again leaving a mark while she's till touching and teasing my sensitivity of my clit

that I can't have the strength to stand and was about to collapse.

Thankfully, Lisa held my waist and made me face her. My heart instantly pounded against my chest when I saw her face that's already staring at me. Her dark eyes met mine in a sensual manner as we both moved our heads closer.

"Lismmmh ha," I whimper when she kisses me, sucking my breaths away while she's holding my waist gently, pulling me closer to her that makes our body touched.

Her lips parted mine, her tongue wanting to explore my mouth while biting my lips as her deep, loud breaths echoed the whole room. While I could only shut my eyes and be lost to the sensation.

I gasped at the intrusion from her tongue and explored my mouth and even suck mine, before her kisses went to my cheek and lick it down to my neck. It happened so fast that I could only hold her shoulder for support while I moved my neck, giving her access to everything she wanted.

"Jump," she suddenly said that made me open my eyes and confusedly look at her but she just seriously stares at me, waiting for me to do what she said. Trusting her word I did what I was told, as my heart jumps together with mine but it eventually calm after I felt her warm hands touched and hold my body, while my legs are wrap around her waist.

We look in each others eyes while catching our breath together, no one dares to look away as Lisa sited on the bed while I was straddling above her.

"You're so beautiful", she said as she cups my face while I could only blushed and buried my face in her neck, feeling embarrassed but I only heard her chuckle and force to look at her again, both our center touch in this position making it hard for me to focus.

"Jennie," she called my name, and when I looked back at her, I could only gasp when she suddenly kissed me hungrily.

She let out a groaned as we move in sync, our center both collide as

I rubs myself against hers that made me lost at the pleasure.

"Lis", I called her and kiss her hungrily as we move in both aggressive ways, wanting the familiar pleasure. My wetness touches her hard cock that it made a sticky sound the more we move together.

"Aww!!"we both stopped when Lisa suddenly flinch which made me look at her worriedly. She was touching her stomach while her face grimace in pain.

I quickly got up and turned on the light and found Lisa's stomach with a large bruise around it.

I gasped loudly and went closer to her as I shoved her hand away and touched it myself.

My tears instantly fell from my eyes while I carress it with my hand and there were shaking, scared that I might hurt her.

"I'm fine," she mumbled, but I could only shake my head to disagree while staring at her eyes.

"Please don't do it again," I beg, which made her mouth parted while contemplating on what to say to me and her brows slightly furrowed, but then the doorbell rang.

I hastily wiped my tears away and went to grab a robe before I went to the door and immediately gave my thanks when the first aid kit was delivered. I walked back to our bedroom and found Lisa still sitting on the bed while waiting for me.

"Stay still", I said when I got sited near her and tried my best to help her treat her wound, while my hands are shaking, scared the I might be doing it wrong or worse hurt her more.

"You're doing okay," she assures as she holds my hand and puts it on her face in where I found lots of cuts and bruises that made my heart ached more.

My tears are falling endlessly while I continue to treat her. How she flinched because of the pain felt like my heart getting stabbed into

pieces.

"Let me take care of you," I said when I'm done cleaning her wounds, and she only nodded her head. She was about to hold and kiss me but I pull away and held her face.

"Let me," I said again while I'm looking seriously at her, wanting her to see my intentions. I see her gulped before she nodded her head and scooted on the bed. Her back is resting against the headboard while intently staring at me, patiently waiting for what I'm about to do.

My heart pounded in nervousness while I slowly took off my robe and crawled myself towards her. My gaze never left hers as I moved closer until our faces were just an inch closer.

"Jennie," she whispered my name while looking at me, wanting to hold my face and touch my body, but she's restraining herself, respecting my decision.

I sited comfortable in front of her, being careful not to do any harm while my head moved closer to her ear.

"Lisa," I moaned her name before I lick her ear and softly bit it, her groaned let out from her mouth while her chest moves deeply, trying to catch her breath.

I felt satisfied at what she's acting as I closed my eyes and kissed her neck, kissing and licking it softly until I felt her tilted and hold my head, pushing me closer.

I kissed and licked her throat before I suck it, leaving a mark that I felt her grasp my hair tightly. Her loud breath doubles when I move my head to her collarbone as I plant kisses after kisses down to the middle part of her chest that I felt her shudders and goosebumps appear on her skin.

Until I came in contact with the bruise in her stomach. My eyes immediately water as I look into it, my hands are shaking while I gently carress and touch the part that made her flinch again.

"Lisa," I cried as my tears fell down to her body.

"Jennie," she called and wiped my tears away as she forcefully made me look at her.

"I'm alright," she assured and kissed my lips and dried my tears away before I held myself together and pushed her gently back to the headboard.

"I promised to treat you well", I mumbled before I peck her lips down to her chest and stomach in where I found the bruise again and this time, I didn't cry instead I kiss it gently, my tongue carress her skin, licking it while putting kisses everywhere hoping it will lessen the pain for her until I didn't know and got carried away by my emotions that I already went down to her center.

Her deep, loud breaths were getting louder as she held my hair and guided my head to her hardening shaft. I gulped hard at what I saw. It's so veiny like a madman while it's standing proudly, just an inch closer to my mouth.

My heart pounded again as fear took over me, but I could never deny the arousement and satisfaction I felt when I saw how Lisa's body shuddered by my every touch.

I look at her dick, unsure of what to do until I remember how she orgasm on the night that first happened to us. I composed myself before I move my hand and grasp her tightly while I move it up and down in the gently manner, that made Lisa whimper and grab my hair as I look at her wanting more validation.

Her eyes are tightly closed while her veins are so visible on her neck, and sweats glisten her skin. A smile appear on my lips before I look back at her shaft and continues to pumps it as it keeps getting harder and harder in my hand, while a white substance goes out from the hole on her tip.

I don't know why and what happened to me when I move my head closer and lick it.

"Fuck!!", Lisa shouted that made me flinched and was about to pull out thinking that I hurt her but I was shock when she fix my hair and push my head back to her cock.

"Lis" I called her name while I look at her when my mouth took the head of her shaft. Lisa look at me while biting her lips, her face express pleasure as she guided me to take her more.

"Yes!! Fuck! Je- Jen- Jennie just like that", she said while her eyes are tightly closed and her head tilted sensually.

So I grasp my hand tighter around her cock and open my mouth and take her more as I breath through my nose. Her groaned and moans keeps getting louder and louder as she moves her head, and keeps grasping my hair until she pull my hand that was holding her shaft and pushes my head to take her more that I felt her tip touches my throat as I gagged and tears drops from my eyes and I held my breath then I felt her legs shakes and her hips move in and out my mouth.

"SHIT!! I'm cum- cumming Jen!

"Fuck!!"

"Shit! Shit! Shit!", I looked at her and our eyes locked together.

"Take my cum", she moaned before I felt something in my mouth that sprayed to my throat that made me coughed and pull out while I put back my hand and continue to pump her tightly and lot of white substance came out of her while some of it sprayed in my face, that made me shock and look Lisa, surprised to what it is.

She chuckled while her face are still in pleasure before she took my hand away and take a tissue and wipes my face while she keeps catching her breath.

"It taste weird", I said when I recalled what happened that made her laugh and held my chin.

"It's my cum, my semen, just like yours last night when I eat you out and damp my face with you wetness", she bluntly said that made me gasped in embarrassment but still confusement is still in me.

"So, cum is like, this?", I said while let her see the white substance in my hand that made her nod and wipe it away with the tissue.

"So what's cumming?", I added and look at her seriously and Lisa just smiles and pull me towards her. I'm straddling on her lap again but this time I'm careful not to hurt her.

"Cumming is, when you're about to reach that orgasm. It's how your body trembles, how you held your breath, how your heart feels like it stop beating, how your mind got lose and surrender to the beautiful pleasure as desire and lust took over your body", she said it while seriously looking at me, her voice sounds so sensual while her hands has been caressing my skin, exploring it everywhere she wants.

"Can-", I stop and touch her lips and stare at it before I look at her eyes, the feeling of arousement that I felt tripled when she described what cumming is and I felt how a flood of wetness goes out inside me, how it seek from her touches and how it wanted to be pleasured.

She look at me and a smirk plasters in her face, her tongue went out and lick her lips, it was like she's seducing abd taunti me to say what I wanted.

"Can you make me cum?"

# Story Time (Not an Update)

You can skip or take time to read this, your choice.

I got a notification in my email that someone posted a message on my profile if I'm familiar with little Saint so I check my wattpad account but the message was gone and I thought 'someone' already deleted it.

So I got curious and searched the little Saint in wattpad, and it was almost the same plot as unholy, and it made me remember how I got the plot of this fanfiction.

-

I was 16 at that time and it was summer, it was my first youth camp that our parish was hosting, I don't really want to join but my friends forced me so I really don't have a choice lol.

Everytime I go to church, this lecturer always got my attention, she's eighteen, young and very devoted to God (her father was not a governor like in the story), however there family are very well known in our place, her dad was a police officer and then her mother was a teacher and both her parents are very active participant in our parish and so is she.

So here comes the reason for my plot.

She was the one who was assigned to list the names of the newcomers, so I'm included while listing our names. My friends are very talkative so they talk to her, complementing on how beautiful she is and how a man will be so lucky if he'll be able to marry her and at that time she was shipped by this boy who is our church's guitarist and very devoted to God as well, so I assume that he was the one my friends are pertaining. Until she laughed and disagreed with what my friends said and told them that she would be entering the convent for nun after summer since she's done with her senior

year and added that her parents has been supportive about it too.

Later that night, after dinner, we were all assigned to our own rooms and beds with my friends as our roommate and that we should sleep early for tomorrow's activity, but at that time, I couldn't sleep maybe because of the new environment which I decided to just go out and walk around the church, the place was not too dark because some of the light are turned on.

I decided to stay at the gate to have a better Internet connection. It was a little dark, but the sound of the vehicle engine that passed on the road comforted me, so I stayed and scrolled through my phone, not until I heard a motorcycle parked across the road and a sound of footsteps running out passed the gate made me panic and hastily turned my phone off, thinking that I might get in trouble if I'll be found in here.

I watched the person as she passed by me and I immediately knew that it was her, (the beautiful lecturer) and then the person on the motorcycle waved at her then took of her helmet and I recognised who she was too. It was my cousin's classmate in college, I saw her in one of my family's gatherings and even had exchange conversations with her. She said she was gay and out, and her family has been supportive of her gender identity. (When I'm still on my hiding in the closet era).

But it really shook me surprised when this beautiful lecturer crossed the road, and they both kissed like, literally kiss in the lips.

I was like, what the heck?

I was not expecting that. It was all so much to take as I continued to look at them, all sweet that you won't even say that they were just friends because of how clingy they were to each other.

They left after that, and I took that opportunity to run back in my room while my heart beat so fast against my chest. I didn't tell anyone about what I saw, but my mind kept on overthinking to how they went to something like that. Like for real, I was not expecting everything I saw. They are just so different.

I heard their relationship got exposed, and they broke up, and the girl in the motorcycle went abroad and already a doctor, so that was Lisa, lol.

The beautiful lecturer became a wife and had her own family.

So that's my story behind the plot of Unholy and most requested G! P Lisa, so yeah.

I added Little Saint in my library shh

# Chapter 14 (M)

Jennie's POV

"Sit on my face,"

"What?" I asked, surprised at what she meant. "I don't get it," I added while my brows furrowed slightly while looking at her.

I heard her sighed, and her face went closer to me. "You want me to make you cum right?" She asked bluntly that made gasp in embarrassment as I try to get off of her lap but she already pulled my waist.

Lisa settled herself on the bed, lying comfortably before I gasped when she made me sit, like literally on her face.

"Lisa!!"I moaned when her mouth touched my centre while her head in between my legs.

I looked down at her, confused and aroused by our position. It feels so good that it made me weaker and weaker as she continue to kiss my cunt, exploring my forbidden fruit, but I guess it's not forbidden anymore when it comes to her.

"Oh! Lo-lord, "I gasped and held the headboard while my other hand grasped Lisa's hair.

Her arm encircled my legs, holding me tightly, pushing me much closer to her mouth. Her tongue lick my cunt and her soft lips suck my clit while all the pleasure succumb my body.

"Lis- oh Lisaaaa"

"You're ea- eating me so so so go-good," I said and looked down at her then our gazed met, her stares that are seducing me, controlling my body to surrender myself to her.

"Mo- more, please Li-Lisaaaa more," I lost with all the pleasure while I shouted and moved my hips much closer to her sinful mouth, sweats drops in my skin and my hands are grasping her hair tightly.

She moaned and closed her eyes, giving me my request as she adjusted her head and inserted her tongue inside of me.

"Oh my Goooooodnesssss!!!"

"Lisaaaaaaa ohh myyyy"

"Ju- just like th- that baby, oh Lisaaaaa"

My head tilted while my mouth parted from so much pleasure, so lost by the feeling, by what she's doing to me.

She lapped my pussy like a hungry person, suck my clit like a madman and lick my cunt exploring it's sensitivity and deepness.

"Lis oh Lisaaa," I shouted her name, and I unconsciously touched my breast, gripping it and teasing my nipple as it grew harder and while a flood wetness goes out in me.

I heard Lisa slurped it and suck my cunt more wanting more of my-

"Oh- Lis, I- I think I'm I-m I'm cumming" I let her know as I felt weak and helpless while I grab her hair tighter for support.

"Oh baby~ make me cuuuum,"

"Al- almost th-thereee," I shouted when my body shook while my eyes are tightly closed and my heart beat stop and I held my breath.

"Oh Li- Lisaaa"

"Ba-babyyyy"

"Oh Goooood!!"

"Ah!! CUMMMMMMIIIIIIINGGGG!!!"

I shouted as I reached my orgasm, my body shook by the feeling,

and the pleasure got succum by the lust and desire of my body.

My body move harder that Lisa held my waist tighter while she continued to eat me out, prolonging my orgasm longer and longer that I can't able to think straight and be lost by what my body is feeling.

---

"Do-don't leave me-please,"

"Don-don-t"

I woke up when I heard Lisa grunting, her head keep moving side to side while sweats filled her forehead. I immediately got up and held her face, hoping to wake her up

"Lisa?"I called her name while I shook her body slightly.

"Wake up!" I told her, but she keeps on grunting in displeasure while her brows creased

"H-help!"she said again, which made me panic and gently tapped her face.

"Hey, I'm here. You're having a nightmare. Wake up, Lisa, " I mumbled as I kept waking her up, but she still wouldn't budge.

I was about to get off the bed and call for help, but what she said made me stop.

"Ch-Chealse, don't le-leave me,"

My heart starts beating faster when I look at her. Surprise to what she said, somehow, a sudden pain in my chest made me lose focus and hard to breathe

"Chealse, come back," she called that name again while I saw how tears fell down from her eyes.

A pang of jealousy hit me when she kept mumbling that name while I'm just here beside her. After all the night that both happened to

us, she called the other girl's name.

Tears fell from my eyes as my chest tightened, hurt by what she was acting, but I thought, why?

I don't have any reason to get mad and jealous for who she was calling, I don't own her, there was no reason to get hurt and jealous because we are not even in a relationship. I'm just a teenager who I met a woman like her, who I let and give permission to explore and touch my body. That was all I was to her. That was all I was to Lisa.

I quickly got up and took all my clothes and wore them all, being careful not to wake her up, and this time, she was already sleeping peacefully, which made me stop and look, but I ended up slapping my self.

"Stop it, Jennie." I mumbled before I shook my head and looked at the time. It was almost 5 am. My heart pounded against my chest painfully as I opened the door and left Lisa alone.

"Goodbye."

---

When I arrived at my house I saw my mother outside the gate, worriedly standing there with her phone on her ear.

"Mommy," I said as I ran towards her, she looks at me wide eyes and was about to get mad when I hugged her tightly and cried on her arms.

"It hurts," I confess to my mother, wanting her to comfort this pain that I'm feeling. It feels like I've been stabbed many times. My chest felt so tight, and my body felt weak.

Is this what heartbreak does to a person? Because if it is, I don't want it. It's so suffocating that it's s making me hard to breathe.

"Baby," my mother said and hugged me back, her hands rubbing my back softly while she put kisses into my head.

"It's alright, I'm here," she added and pulled my face and made me

look at her.

"Sweetie, mommy's here," she comforted me, her eyes waters as she saw my state.

"It hurts," I said as I cried in front of her, and my mother could only sighed, feeling helpless and confused about what I'm acting.

"What's the problem, Jennie?"she softly asked while she kept wiping my tears away with her thumb.

"I- I think I have feelings for her," I confess, which made my mother stop and seriously look at me. I felt scared and held her hand, hoping she won't get mad, and I could only hope she would understand me.

"Mom," I called her. However, she only stepped back and looked around the place.

"Let's talk but not in here," she firmly said and held my hand as she pulled me inside up into my room.

I felt scared as my head hurt with the mixed emotions that I'm feeling.

"Jennie," she mumbled my name as she looked at me seriously.

"What happened? And a her? Jennie, that's so wrong, "she added as frustrations express her face, and I could only look down and play with my hands. My embarrassment consumed me.

"I- I tr-tried to stop it, mom. I really did. " I tried to explain myself, but only a loud sighed came from her and held my hand.

"When did it happen?"she asked while looking at me seriously. I'm contemplating to tell her the truth, that maybe it could make her angrier and hate me.

"Tell me the truth, Jennie," she said while she forcefully made me look at her.

"I-it's in the church, down the storage place," I answered the truth,

and she only sighed and brushed her hair while looking at me.

"This woman, is this Lisa??"my mom asked, and I could only nod as an answer.

"Oh my goodness," she said and helplessly looked at me.

"Not her Jennie, please not her," my mother held my hand tightly. It feels like she's in panic and worried for me at the same time.

I felt confused about what she was acting, it feels like I did a crime for having feelings for Lisa. It was just inevitable, I tried to stop it, hoping to get away from her and her presence, but still, I could never deny how I wanted to look for her and how I wanted to see her.

"Why?" I asked as I tried to wipe my tears and look at my mother, wanting to know the reason.

"Just do it!" She shouted, which made me step back and stare at her, surprised at what my mom is acting.

She was not like this, never in my life that I was shouted by her.

"I'm sorry," she apologised and went to me, I was about to step back again, but she had already held my hand.

"What ever happened, don't tell any of this to your dad and please Jennie, stay away from her," she sighed and looked up, trying to stop her tears from falling.

"I'm sorry that I didn't do anything to stop you from falling for her, I'm sorry that I didn't protect you enough to be away from Lisa."

I'm so confused about what she is acting, and my heart keeps getting louder and louder, scared of what she might say to me. Scared to what I get myself into.

"Why?"I managed to ask while I looked straight at my mother's eyes, seeking answers to my questions, hoping to get a real answer from her while my tears never stopped falling from my eyes.

"She's a murderer, Jennie. Lisa killed someone."

# Chapter 15

Jennie's POV

It's been three days passed, and there was no Lisa who tried to visit me, or at least see me. Her presence was just suddenly gone. It was like she was never here and was like we never met.

However, the gossip about her spread like wildfire, that how could a very well-known and respected couple in Busan have a granddaughter like Lisa, most people in our town hated her, even father Mark told me to stay away from 'that woman', that's what he called her.

And I am now starting to see what was happening. All these people, all these deacons, and even my parents are all hypocritical on the way they talk bad about a person like Lisa. I'm feeling embarrassed on myself, too, because I acted in my impulse and didn't even wait for her to wake up and explain to me about that night.

"Jennie, I was not really expecting that, Lisa. I heard she was a doctor, and then she murdered someone. If it weren't for her family, her license would be evoked," it was Aunt Laura, Irene's mother.

Seriously?

She just came here just to talk bad about her? What's wrong with these people?

I just sighed and ignored her while I kept chopping the ingredients needed for today's lunch for the kids. This was supposed to be held tomorrow in Sunday Mass, but the church changed it for some reason.

"Mom, stop it," I heard Irene say to her mother. "Embarrassment was filled in her tone.

"Why would I? I was just saying what I heard, and it came from both of Jennie's parents, so I think it's true. I mean, Jennie's dad wouldn't lie. He's the governor, after all," she still didn't stop, and I could only grip the knife tightly, holding back my emotions to stop myself from talking back to her.

"Mommy!"Irene tried to stop her mom again, but I could only hear the hissed from her mother, stomping her foot and already annoyed by what her daughter is acting.

"What? You're starting to get on my nerves Irene, remember I'm your mother. Have some respect. "

I rolled my eyes when I heard that word that came from her mouth.

"The hypocrisy," I mumbled, and I think she heard it when I felt her stop and a feeling of someone staring at my back.

"Are you saying something, Jennie?" She said, and I felt her walk toward me. I inhaled deeply, readying myself from her attitude.

I looked at her when she went to my side, I stared at her like I was bored, and she could only scoff and roll her eyes at me, I even saw her hold her waist, already losing patience.

"I did not, Aunt Laura," I tried to deny, just to taunt her on where she could go. I'm done being fake myself, I need to stand for myself too.

"Don't lie to me," she hissed while her eyes narrow, glaring at me.

"Ahh Jennie, I think I can finish this. You can go," Irene intervened, maybe sensing the tension that's happening in the kitchen.

I looked at Irene, and I saw how her eyes beg for me to just let her mother.

"Okay," I just said and was about to put the knife down when she said something that made me burst out.

"Why? We have many things to do in here. Oh, maybe you need to see that murderer aren't you? Have some decency, Jennie"

My brows furrowed while my chest kept rising up and down, hoping to calm myself, but what she said just hit a nerve in me, not for myself but for Lisa.

"I mean, that's what people said. That they saw you hanging out with . What's her name again? Lisa? If I hadn't even known better, you've opened your legs to her. "

"MOM!! STOP IT ALREADY!!"Irene shouted and held her mother's arm, while I couldn't stop myself and stab the knife in the chopping board while I glared at her, making her feel how I don't like what she said.

She gasped by what I did and acted so scared and held her daughters arm tighter, even her body shaking while she stared at me, frightened.

I glared and rolled my eyes at her before I took off my apron and went outside. My heart kept beating against my chest while my hands were shaking. I still couldn't make myself calm after what happened.

My tears were building inside my eyes, while a feeling of pain hit me, and I couldn't deny how I wish Lisa was here, that she's with me fighting those kinds of people. But what can I do? I have judged her myself as well, and even my messages and calls are ignored by her.

"Ahhhh!!"shouted and kicked the stone on the ground, letting out my frustrations while I wiped my tears away.

"Jennie?"I stopped when I heard someone call my name. I looked back, and I saw Irene with a tissue on her hand.

"Hey," I just said and waited for her to walk closer to me. She smiles and gives me the tissue she's holding.

"I'm sorry about what my mom did," she apologised, and I could only smile slightly while my tears fell down endlessly, having no choice but to take the tissue from her hand.

I wiped it on my cheeks while I kept crying as the burst of emotions

went to me.

"Come here," she said and hugged me tightly while tapping my back gently.

"Don't listen to what they are saying," she added

"I- Irene", I called her name as I cried and sob on her arms.

"I - I miss her," I confess, and she didn't even flinch or got surprised by what i said and just hugged me tightly.

"Shhh, I know - I understand. Stop crying already, " she whispered to my ears while I kept crying harder, and she was just hugging me, saying comforting words to help me calm.

"W-why are you not surprised?"I asked curiously when I settled down, and now we are both sitting in the swing , a small park just beside the church.

Irene looked at me and smiled, and a flush of red was seen on her face.

"I was about to go back in the storage room when I remembered that Father Mark also wanted me to get something, but then I saw you both, ki-kissing each other," she confessed, and I could only open my mouth, surprised to what she told me.

"Oh God," I mumbled while I covered my face in embarrassment.

"I- I'm so sorry you have to see t-that," I stutter while I try my best to look straight at her.

Irene smiles, and she still can't stop blushing, too.

"Wow, Jennie. I was not expecting you're into bad girls now, "she tried to tease me, giving me her playful smile.

"Oh, stop it!!"I just said and shook my head. I can't still move on from what she said.

"Why? I mean, she's a good catch. She's beautiful, and the tattoos on

her left arm are just so hot, "she said, teasing me more.

Well Lisa's tattoos are giving her this bad girl vibes, and it's making her more attractive because it looks good on her. It was like perfectly made and drawn for her.

"Don't think of her much, Jennie, your face are all red," she still didn't stop, and now she's laughing at my flustered face.

-

"But why didn't you tell everyone about it?"I asked curiously when we both settled down.

"Why would I? It's your life, Jennie. I'm no one to meddle with all your decisions, " she said while smiling at me, no judgements and whatsoever.

I felt like a bone was taken off in my throat when I heard what she said. It comforted me, and at least I have someone who understands me.

"I'm still surprised about it, though, like I was blown in my head. You know what I mean?"

And I could only agree with her.

Irene and I, we grew up together and even devoted ourselves to God as the same time and we promise to be as good as we can, to serve him with all our best but the difference with the two of us, was that she never took an oath to enter the convent.

'I wanted to be a mother', that's what I always heard from her, and my heart flutters when I imagined how would be a lovely mother she would be.

"Yes, yes I do," I just said, and we both smiled at each other.

But then I saw someone behind her, she looked so familiar to me and when I heard her voice that's when I realised who she was.

"Seulgi!!"I called her name suddenly that even Irene looked at the

person I'm calling.

I saw how Seulgi looked at my side confusedly, and when she realised who I was, she hastily put her phone back in her pocket and ran towards her car.

Before she could enter, I had already run towards her and caught her shirt, gripping it tightly so she won't be able to run away.

"Jennie!!"I heard Irene shout and went towards us.

"Help me hold her tightly," I said, which made her panic and went to Seulgi's back, hugging her to stop moving.

"Let go of me!!"she grunted and pulled our hands away, but we just held her tighter while I looked at her eyes seriously.

"Where's Lisa?"I asked, which made her stop from moving and look at me, trying to be intimidating.

"I d-don't know," she lied. It's so obvious when she can't say it to my face.

"Tell me the truth or -" I stopped, and I saw a big rock on the ground.

"Hold her tighter for me Irene",I said, and she could only nod her head.

I let go of Seulgi's shirt, and I quickly picked up the rock on the ground and gestured to throw it on her car.

"No!! Stop! Stop!!"she shouted and tried to walk towards me, but Irene was holding her tightly

"You'll tell me, or I'm going to throw this on your car!!"I threatened, and this time, she gulped hard, and her hands were clasped together.

"I will, I will tell you, alright! Just put that down, "she said, but I didn't budge and was about to throw the rock for real when I got what I wanted.

"Fuck!! She's at Lucifer's. It's a club, she was just there before I got here", she told me the address of the club and that's the time Irene let go of her and she quickly went her car and hug it

"Stupid", I heard Irene mumbled while looking amused at Seulgi who was now crying while kissing her beloved car.

"Give me you car keys", I said that made her stop and look at me, shocked to what I said.

"You're kidding right?", she said while her eyes open wide.

"Just give it to her stupid or else we will scream in here that you molested and even forced us to come with you", Irene intervened then she look at me and winked, I could only laugh silently by what she threaten to Seulgi.

"Are you crazy??!!", Seulgi shouted but Irene just acted that she was about to scream but Seulgi walk towards her and cover her mouth.

"Fine!! Crazy bitches", she mumbled before she give me her car keys, her hands were even shaking while giving it to me that made Irene laugh loudly and took the key herself and gives it to me.

"Drive safely Jennie!!!", I heard Irene shouted while I drove to the place, Seulgi told me. I can't believe this, I'm driving a car when I don't even have a license.

I changed

---

Who wants Seulrene?

# Chapter 16

Irene's POV

"Now what?," I heard this person next to me said, her brows creased in annoyance while sighing loudly.

I don't know why, but I felt a sudden urge in myself to laugh at her situation. I mean, by what I see, she just won't let anyone use her car, and yet Jennie and I force her to give us the keys.

"It's just a car," I said, trying to annoy her, and my smile grew wider when she looked at me like I've grown two heads.

"It's not just a car. It's my life. Damn it!! If something happened to my baby, I'm going to make Lisa pay for it, " she mumbled while kicking the stones on the ground, her breathes sound so heavy while she keeps grunting about what happened.

While I'm just staring at her, looking at what she would do and what she will be doing until she stares at me, then takes her phone out.

"Give me your number," she said while she gave me her phone.

My eyes went wide, confused as to why she needed it.

"I mean, you're Jennie's friend, and she has my car, and I will contact you about it," she explained, but I could only smirk by what she's acting.

I folded my arms against my chest while I stared at her, amuse by her antics.

"Why do you need mine when you have Lisa's number, right? Remember? Jennie is going to Lisa, "I taunt her, and I laugh internally when I see how her ears and cheeks immediately redden

"Ye - yeah, of course. I just forgot, " she tried to say and pursed her lips, embarrassment filled in her.

I don't know why, but my smile grows wider and takes her phone from her hands and I type my number and call my phone. I gave back her phone, and I saw how her mouth opened.

"What?"I said and winked at her before I took my own phone and saved her number.

"Anyways, I'm going," I added and left her as I walked towards the church. It was almost lunch, and I still needed to help and feed the children.

But then I heard someone walking behind me, and there I saw Seulgi walking just a few feet apart.

"What are you doing?" I asked confusedly, but she just smiled and walked closer towards me until we were walking at the same pace and in the same direction.

"I'm going with you," she answered me after some time, which made me stop and look at her, narrowing my eyes and trying to intimidate her.

"Why?"I asked, but she just shrugged

"Why not?"

She asked back, which made me roll my eyes at her and just continue walking. We're so short in people anyway, might as well, used her presence.

-

"Come on!! Children are starving!!!"I shouted to Seulgi when she took so long to take the plates from the kitchen.

"Why did I agree to this?" I heard her mumbled while sighing loudly, and drops of sweat fell down from her forehead. Even her shirt are all damp.

I just shook my head at her antics and took the plates from her hand.

"I can handle this," she tried to say

"It's fine, just help others in serving the dishes," I dismissively said , and she had no choice but to agree to what I said.

While I gave the children their plate, I saw how she tried to talk to one of the server, asking questions about what was happening and why we needed to feed these children when they are not even our responsibility.

I look at Mica, who just laughs by her questions while still tending the children. I walked closer to them and stood beside Seulgi.

"Because unlike us, they are less fortunate," I was the one who answered her question, and I saw how she nodded her head while holding her chin, it was like she's thinking something so deep.

'Cute', I suddenly thought that made me shake my head when I realised what came over me.

"Who buys all the foods for the kids?"she asked again, and I just smiled because of her curiosity.

"The parish sponsors, tithes, and sometimes we give something so they can have more foods to eat and sometime bring to their family"

"I want to help," she suddenly said, which made me stop and look at her, shock to what she just said.

"You're kidding, right?" But she only laughs and continues in helping the children.

-

We were walking side to side to towards the exit gate. Seulgi said she had someone who would fetched her later, so I volunteered to send her off.

"Today was fun." I heard her say that made me look at her, her

smile broke from her lips when our both gazed connects, and suddenly my heart starts to beat nervously.

I looked away and walked faster, but still, she managed to catch up and held my hand, making me stop.

"Is there a problem?"I asked, faking my confusement when she stared at me seriously. Her goofy smile was all gone, and was replaced by her blank face, but her eyes, it wanted to ask something.

"Do - do you have a boyfriend, Irene?"she bluntly asked, which made me shock and pull my hand away from her. She was shocked by what I did, but nevertheless, she smiled and held my hand again.

"I can't believe I will be saying this, but I think I'm going to come to church frequently,"

She said that with a small smile on her face.

Gone with all, her smirks and grins instead she was all serious, and to the way she looked at me, it felt like my whole life will going to changed because of her.

---

Jennie's POV

I arrive at the address Seulgi gave to me, and my heart starts to hammers against my chest while I look at the whole place. It was all dark and gloomy, and it's even just 12 in the afternoon.

I went out of the car, and I felt a contemplation if I'll go inside or just go back, but when I thought that I'll be able to see Lisa again after those three days my heart beats excitedly.

"Identification card, please." I was stopped by a very buff men at the entrance, and I could only get intimidated by the ways he's looking at me.

I quickly got a wallet in my pocket and gave him my I.D he quickly scanned it while creasing his brows. While I keep playing with my

hands, trying to fight my anxiety.

But I felt a relief when he gave my I. D back and move away from the entrance.

When I went inside, I was blown by what I saw.

"What is this place?" I mumbled under my breath when I saw people all drunk and dancing with the loud music. It's just noon, and they are all so wild.

"Hi, you're new here, aren't you?" I heard someone talk to me while I try to find Lisa in this kind of place. It's all so big and dark, and the lights are hurting my eyes, and I could say it will be really hard for me to find her.

When I look at the person who talks, he smiles and offers his hands, and I look at it confusedly, but he only moves closer to my ears and shouted.

"Just trust me," I heard him said and before I could react, he managed to pull me from where I was, and I found myself in a table with 5 men, its still loud but it's not crowded anymore.

"Have a sit," the guy who pulled me said and gestured the single sofa near me. I gulped before I nodded my head, and nervousness came over me while scared to what would happen.

"What's your name?"They all asked and gave me a glass of liquor, but I politely declined and told them I don't drink.

"I'm Jennie." I just answered them while I kept looking around, hoping I could find Lisa, I'm starting to get scared, especially how the way they all look at me.

I saw how they looked at each others eyes, and a smirk appeared on their faces.

"So what's the catch Jennie, you're not here to drink, so care to tell us the reason?"one of them asked, and I was about to answer when someone went to me and held my shoulder. I immediately flinched and was about to take it away, but what I said made them all stop.

"I'm looking for Lisa," I answered, and they all looked at each others eyes, and the guy who held my shoulder earlier quickly moved away from me.

They suddenly laugh while I look at them confused, to what they are acting. Their smiles were all fake while fidgeting on their sit.

"Why did you not tell us? She's just behind that door. You can go there if you want, " he said, and my smile immediately broke out by what he told me. I thank them and was about to walk towards the door he is talking about when the guy held my hand.

"What's with you and Lisa? Are you one of her girls?" He asked, and that made me stop.

"One of what?"I clarified, but he only shook his head and let go of my hand.

Is Lisa seeing someone other than me? Does she have other girls she's playing and having an urge to desire with someone else?

Questions kept popping in my head while I walked closer towards the door they were saying, and the feelings from the night were Lisa and I last saw each other hunting me again.

A feeling of irritation and jealousy crept in me when I thought of Lisa having other girls other than me.

My hands were shaking while I held the doorknob and twisted it, and my chest beat louder and louder, competing with the sound that came from the whole place.

But what shock and hurt me the most when I saw her, the person I'm having feelings with, the person who I surrender myself, the person who I missed so much.

"Lisa", I uttered her name painfully when I saw her sitting in one of the couches, a cigarette in her left hand and the other was holding a glass of liquor while 4 women are all kissing her body, touching every inch of her, and licking every part of her skin.

I don't know how but despite the loud music that came from outside

this room she manage to hear my voice and look at me, her eyes went wide but she never did made a move to atleast stop all the women that was all over her. Instead she just smirk and pull the girls hair and kiss her while I'm looking intently at both of them.

Jealousy and pain took over my body as I walk closer to Lisa and forcefully pull the girl who she was kissing. My anger controlled my body and slap Lisa's face, resulting a loud gasp from all the people inside the room even she was shocked to what I did as she looks at me while her jaw tighten.

"Fu-", she was about to cursed but I already held her face and ended up kissing her and straddled myself on her lap.

"You're mine", I whispered in between our kisses.

# Chapter 17

Jennie's POV

I felt Lisa hold my waist, pulling me much closer to her, her breathes were all deep while our tongue fought for dominance, but as always, she won.

"Bitch!!", I heard someone mumbled but I couldn't careless and just kept kissing Lisa longer until I felt her dick under my center, it was starting to hardened that I immediately moves my body wanting to have friction on her hard shaft.

"We were the one you are supposed to be fucking and not that slut," the girl protested and then all of them agree that made Lisa stopped and pull me away from her.

"Lis," I said her name, surprised at what she's doing.

Why? Don't she want me losing my pride and being one of her girls who will swoon over her?

I felt insulted to what she did that I pulled away from her and just sited to the couch that was in front of them, and my chest tightened as it beat painfully against my chest.

All the girls laughs and was about to come closer to Lisa but she gestured her hand to stop and look at the counter, I followed to what she was looking but then my heart beat doubles when I conclude what it is.

"Oh, you want to get high, alright!"I heard one of the girls say and take a sniff to the white powder that was put on Lisa's table. My eyes went wide at what she did and I look around the place, there are all 4 tables in the room, and Lisa's table was the biggest however just like Lisa's, each table have a white substance on top of it.

I'm so surprised at what was happening inside this room. All the people in here are all high and an addict. Most of them are all naked and are having sex with whoever they want.

"Oh God", I can't help but to mumbled as I saw all four of them took the drugs in their mouth, some even sniff it while looking at Lisa, wanting to amazed her but she didn't even glanced at them, instead she was looking at me, intimidating me by her cold stares.

"I'm sure Seulgi was the one who told you about this place, but my question is, why are you here?"she asked so cold, and her tone was so dark while taking a hit from her cigar.

Thankfully, she's not taking drugs, I mean, she's not right? It was for the girls who kept seducing Lisa with their touches.

I gulped hard while trying to fight my nervousness, I kept fidgeting with my hand while our gazed locked together.

"I wanted to see you," I managed to say without stuttering, but still, the hammering of my chest kept getting louder and louder.

I saw Lisa smirk and shake her head before she leaned her back on the couch and crossed her legs straight, looking at me. I felt so intimidated by her presence that I just sat properly, waiting for her to say a word.

"That's funny," she said and took the glass from the table and drank it. Then she gestured a girl to come closer to her, and my heart sank when she lick her neck, which made the girls moan.

"Lisa," I mumbled her name, wanting her to stop while my hands were already clenching. Wanting to hurt her physically and the girls that have been wanting her.

"From what I remember, you're the one who left me alone Jennie, not even a note or anything, and then when I got home, I got news that your parents have been spreading information about me", she said, her teeth are gritting in so much frustration while her brows furrowed.

When she said those words, I understood where this was coming

from. I mean, if I were on her shoes, I would be mad myself, and I even left her at that time.

"I miss you," I just said, hoping it could tame her, but still, she didn't even react one bit. Instead, she just sighed and ignored me.

I watched her as she interacted with all her girls, how they swayed their hips to have Lisa's attention. How do they even do that? It was all dirty and lustful.

"Please, Lis, stop it." I can't help but to beg, unable to take the scene in front of me, how they all throw themselves to Lisa, and she's just also letting all of them.

This time, she stops when she's about to kiss the girl and look at me, amazement was filled in her eyes.

She pushed all the girls away, and then she stood up and went to me. But not before she took a shot from the glass, and I was shocked when she held my face and licked my neck, which made me gasp and hold her shoulder for support.

"Lisa~", I called her name when she kept licking and sucking my neck while her hand went to my waist, griping me tightly.

"Fuck!", she cursed when she pulled away from me. She was catching her breath while she looked at me.

"Get out," she suddenly said

I was frozen and shocked to what she said.

"What?" I asked, but she only stood up and went back to her seat and was about to sniff the drugs that was in front of her, but I grabbed it immediately, putting it away from her reach.

"Give it back," she was already glaring at me, her eyes that filled with so much anger, but still there was desire in them, I know she want me, I know she still do.

"I won't. This is bad for you. " But the girls only laugh by what I said and just gestured their hand, and not even a minute there was

another set of drugs that was put in the table.

God! I can't believe this place.

All the girls laugh and quickly sniff the drugs themselves, and they all look at me, mocking me in front of Lisa. Their clothes were not even considered one when I could almost see their souls in how thin it was.

"Here, suck my tongue," I was alerted when I heard what the girl said. Her mouth was wide open while waiting for Lisa to take the drugs from her mouth.

Lisa looked at me as smirk plastered on her face and held the girl's nape, and did what the girl asked her to do.

I couldn't take it anymore. I stood up while tears fell from my eyes, and my chest tightened so much that I couldn't barely breathe from the pain that she had caused me.

I can't believe it. How could she?

"Aww," I hissed in pain when someone held my waist aggressively. Forcing me to face him as he tried to kiss me, his mouth smelled alcohol and cigarettes. My heart hammers in fear, but what changed my mind when I saw how Lisa stood up and was about to come to me. Her eyes were filled with the same emotions that I had been experiencing while I kept looking at them earlier.

This is not me, but she provoked me to become like this.

I held the man's nape and acted that I was kissing him, he's too high and weak to do what he wanted, but that's what I thought when he grip me tightly and pulled me closer to him.

At that time, I felt my heart skip a beat, scared to what might have happened to me, but Lisa, she came as she roars and punched the guy who tried to molested me. That it cause chaos around the room as bouncer comes and stops her from killing the man.

"Fuck!! Fuck yourself!!!" She shouted while she keeps on punching him that she could kill him at this moment.

"Stop!!"I tried to shout, but she didn't budge

"STOP IT LISA!!"This time, she did, she look at me while catching her breath, glaring at me.

"What the hell, Jennie!!"she said and walked closer to me. She held my hands tightly, she looked so mad and angry that veins showed on her face and neck.

"Are you a slut now ha? Do you want to be a fucking slut??!!!", she shouted with all the people around this place, embarrassing me.

I can't help it. She hurt me so much that I ended up slapping her endlessly. I slap her hard with all the strength that was left in me while she just stands and takes everything that I'm giving her.

"I hate you!! God, I hate you, Lisa!"I told her with all wrath I'm feeling toward her.

"I wish I never met you!!" I added, and that's the time she catches my hand while she looks at me, regrets was filled in her eyes.

"Everyone, get out!!"she shouted, but we only looked at her confusedly.

"I SAID GET THE FUCK OUT!!" that's the time everyone hastily left, not even bothering on wearing all their clothes back, even the waiters and workers left too, leaving me all alone in this place with just the two of us.

"I'm going," I said and was about to leave her when she pushed me to towards the wall, cornering me helplessly.

And I could only sighed to my situation because I know. I could never get away from her again. I tried to look away from her, not wanting to look back, but she had already held my chin and forced me to stare at her.

"Stay here, stay with me," she said under her breath that I couldn't even almost hear it, but I did, I heard it clearly.

My heart starts to soften again, as it beats louder because of what

she's been doing to me.

I can't believe this. I'm helpless.

"Okay," I answered her, surrendering to my own feelings, feeling stupid to what I'm acting.

I saw her smirk and pulled me back to the table, and my chest ached to what I saw, the drugs that she had just shared with one of the girls. Maybe she saw me looking at it and cleaned the table before she gestured me to seat near her.

Silence filled the room when both got settled until I felt her move and took a cigarette from the table, and lit it next to me.

At least she's not taking illegal drugs now.

'Lord, help me. What am I doing with my life?' I can't help but think that way, all of this. All of Lisa has shown me all my dislikes about people.

I hate people who smoke, I'm not comfortable with people who drink, and I don't even like people who have tattoos and worse of all, I can't believe that I'm still staying with her after I saw her took drugs infront of me, she's an addict, even a womanizer and I've seen it all in just this day and yet I'm still here, wanting to have more time with her.

"I'm so stupid," I mumbled, which made her chuckled. Maybe she heard what I said and found the humour behind it.

"You like me, don't you?"she didn't really ask. She more likely stated while I felt her gaze look at my side.

I inhaled deeply while I stared at her, she's so serious while playing with the cigar in her hand.

"Answer me Jennie", she said when I kept my silence, and I could only nod as an answer to her question.

"You're one fucking brave", she compliment while she scoot closer to me, pressing the lit part of the cigar on the ashtray.

"But still you're right, you're so stupid, Jennie, why did you let yourself fall for me?" she added while she held my face and kissed me hungrily, and I could only gasp in surprise as what she did, her tongue immediately invaded my mouth as I taste the liquor and cigar from her mouth, but still I didn't want her to stop, even wanting more from her.

But no, I already made myself stupid. I don't want to be labelled as one of her girls.

So I pulled away as my eyes narrowed and held her face, I carress it with my thumb and looked at her seriously.

"Do you want me?" I whispered, and bit my lip seducing her, and I saw her nod her head, and tried to kiss me again, but I moved away and my thumb went to her lips, parting it slightly.

"Promise yourself to me. Just for me, only me Lisa and I will give myself to you, all of me, my body, my soul, and my virginity, it will be yours to take, anywhere and anytime, you want", I added while looking seriously at her, while I kept letting loud breathes, as a feeling of desire overwhelms me.

Lisa looked at me as she held her breath, her brows creased while she held my face.

"Just promise me, you'll be mine, without any other girl's could ever kiss nor touch you. Just me Lisa, and I promise I'll also be yours, and I will accept you whoever you are and whatever you want to do. Just be with me, and only me. "

"You're a bitch Jennie", she declared and pour the tequila, as what the label from the bottle said. She gave me a glass as we clicked it together, I stared at Lisa as she drank it without hesitation, and she looked back at me, confused as to why I'm still not drinking mine.

I felt an embarrassment filled in me as I tried to drink it, but she already held my hand, stopping me.

"I never drink, maybe sometimes when we are required to drink the wine from the m-mass," I explained, and a tint of redness filled my

cheeks, however Lisa just nodded and took the glass from me and drink it herself but what surprised me when she held my face and kiss me, as we both shared the liquor in both our mouths and the bitterness made my face crunch that made Lisa chuckled in between our kisses.

I let out a moaned as we kissed longer, I felt weak as we got lost in this passion and lust. Our tongue was both fighting for dominance. Our lips were all swollen for the endless kissing, but still, I wanted more, I wanted more from her. Until I can't take it and move myself on her top, straddling her as we kiss in so much desire and lust.

"Lis," I said when we pulled away, our forehead resting together while we caught our breath.

I want her to say something, I want her to promise me, I want her to give herself exclusively just for me, like I am for her because it hurts me to see her with other else aside from me.

"I'm yours, Jennie, and you're mine as well, not even God can have control over you," she stated while an overwhelming feelings of satisfaction filled in me as I sold myself to this devil.

.

# Chapter 18 (M)

I don't know what happened, but chapter 18 was suddenly published without my knowledge, and it was still not done and supposed to be on draft.

However, enjoy the rest of the chapter!!

Jennie's POV

I woke up early for today's Sunday Mass, I was assigned to be the lecture as per the schedule. As I walked inside the church, I heard my phone rang and my lips curve as I saw Lisa's name on the screen.

"Good morning," I greeted her as I put my bag on the table and sited beside Irene, I mouthed her a good morning, but she only smiled, and make herself busy with her phone. My brows creased confused as to who she was texting.

"Where are you?" I heard Lisa ask over the phone.

"I'm at church it's my schedule to be the lecture for today," I said to her, and I heard her humm before she ended the call. I was about to say something to her, but I guess it could wait.

After what happened yesterday, Lisa drove me home after my father called, and I had no choice but to obey him even if I wanted to be with Lisa at that time. And so far, I've got what I wanted, and all I need to do is to trust her.

"I guess everything went well yesterday?"Irene asked when she's done with her phone and put it on her table.

"You have no idea what has happened," I said as I stood up and fixed my uniform in front of the mirror.

"Come on, tell me," she said and went to me while holding my

hands. "From the look on your face, I guess it's good news," and when I nodded my head, she squell so loud that I ended up covering her mouth.

The two of us will going to get caught because of how loud she is.

"Irene, remember no one must know about this," I said, and when she was about to respond, someone knocked on the door we both look at the wall clock and our brows creased when we still have 30 minutes left before the mass starts.

I walked towards the door and gently opened it, but what shocked me when Seulgi was standing outside. I look back at Irene, wanting to know what was happening, and she seems expecting Seulgi to be here when they both waved to each other.

"Ahh, what is happening?"I asked, but no one seemed to hear me when Seulgi just entered immediately and gave me a bouquet of flowers and a little box.

Even confused, I still accepted what she gave as she went to Irene and gave her another flower too.

"What's this?"I said, louder, hoping they could at least talk to me when they are both lost with their conversation.

"Right, Lisa gave that to you,"

My heart drums against my chest, and I can't able to process what she means.

"Lisa, what?"I asked, wanting to confirm something, and she only smiled and winked at me.

"Read the letter," and I immediately look for the letter that she meant. I felt myself getting more excited when I found it, I put everything in my table as I read the letter.

*Jennie*

*Good morning,*

*I*

*hope this will make your day better. Even*

*though*

*I*

*wanted*

*to*

*give this to you personally but*

*I*

*don't*

*want to give*

*you*

*any more*

*trouble*

.

As I read the first paragraph, my heart immediately melted by her words, I appreciated it so much, and I was not expecting all of these from the person like Lisa. I mean, she was cold, and I admit she's not a good person, but from the thought that she gave me all of this, it made me so happy.

*However,*

*I*

*want you*

*to*

*wear*

*what's*

*in the box, it's my special gift for you as*

*I'm*

*exclusively yours and*

*you're*

*mine and as my first request, wear it during your*

*lecture*

.

*I'll*

*be there*

*watching*

*you*

My smile faded after I read what was in the second paragraph, and my heart hammered in fear, overthinking by what she wanted me to do. I quickly went to the box Seulgi gave to me, and I gulped hard when I saw what's inside.

Lisa sent me a picture and video of how to use it last night, and I didn't know that she already had a planned waiting for me.

---

"Jennie, it's your turn now. Are you alright? You're turning pale," Irene interrupted my cloud of thoughts by nudging me, reminding me that it was my time to do the lecture. But a feeling of fear crept in me, scared to what will I do in front of all these people.

Lisa, she made me wear a vibrator at what she told me. She even called me on my phone to make sure that I would do what she wanted, and I couldn't just ignore her request. I had already made my promise, I already sold myself to her.

The least thing I wanted to do was to disappoint her and go back to her other girls in those sinful clubs, and just the thought of it bothers me so much.

"God," I mumbled before I shook my head and stood up. Even Irene assisted me slightly towards the platform, making sure I'm settled and alright.

I look up at everyone while my heart hammers against my chest, scared to what will happen to me after this moment. Both my parents are sited infront, all the deacons are on the side, and Lisa's grandparents are not too far away from me as well.

They are all waiting for me to start my lecture, anticipating what word I will share with them.

I inhaled deeply and looked around the place. So far, I have not seen Lisa among the crowd, and there was still nothing strange going on with what I'm wearing. I bowed down and cleared my throat, wanting to calm myself from this anxiety.

"The first reading," I started and looked at everyone and licked my lips.

"Gn 19:15-29"

"As dawn was breaking, the angels urged Lot on, saying, "On your way!

Take with you your wife and your two daughters who are here,

or you will be swept away in the punishment of Sodom."

When he hesitated, the men, by the LORD's mercy,

seized his hand and the hands of his wife and his two daughters

and led them to safety outside the city.

As soon as they had been brought outside, he was told:

"Flee for your life!

Don't look back or stop anywhere on the Plain.

Get off to the hills at once, or you will be swept away."

"Oh, no, my lord!" Lot replied,

"You have already thought enough of your servant

to do me the great kindness of intervening to save my life." I let out a loud breath when I finished the first sentence.

I mean, Lisa wouldn't do something strange to me, right? I'm in front of everyone else. Both my parents are here. Even the priest was on my side listening to my lecture, and almost everyone eagerly understood the first reading.

"But I can't flee to the hills to keep the disaster from overtaking me,

and so I shall die.

Look, this town ahead is near enough - Oh God!" I bit my lips to stop myself from moaning. The hammering of my heart doubles against my chest as I felt a sudden vibration on my centre.

I can't believe this.

I look at the crowd hoping to find her when I felt the vibration getting stronger, and I could only held the lecture table for support, gripping it tightly so that I won't able to make a sound.

"Go on," I looked at Father Mark's side when I heard him, gesturing that I should continue. Even weak and flustered, I nodded my head and inhaled deeply.

"To -to escape to.

It's only a small - ahh! p-place.

Let me flee - ohh! there-it's a sm--all . Oh my goodness!! place, is it not?- ohhh haa

that my -- ohh! life may be saved." I was rumbling, moaning in every word of the sentence while I felt myself sweating and getting hot because of the pleasure that the vibrator have been giving me.

I can't take it. I'm about to cum.

"Oh Gooood," I can't help but let out a sound I was hoping it did not come out as sensual since I'm still standing and the mic was still close to my mouth.

The pleasure it's too much, I can't finish this.

I look at everyone in the crowd as they all look at me, all worried and even both my parents are hesitating if they will come to me or not, but I gestured them not to, that I'm okay because if they'll know what was the reason I'm acting this way they will kill me.

Oh God they will kill me.

But then I saw Lisa among the crowd, her sunglasses was hiding her identity while she's holding a remote on her hand and a smirk was plastered on her face, then she slowly took it off and wink at me.

I don't know why but the pleasure increases that I grip on the lecture table tightly, my fingers are turning white because of how tight I'm holding it.

"Jennie are you alright? Irene can be a substitute for your lecture if you're not feeling well", Father Mark said and was about to came to me but I signalled him to stop and I nodded hastily and look at the bible again.

I tried to clear my throat and look away from everyone, wanting to distract myself from this overwhelming feeling of pleasure and desire.

"Well, then," he replied,

"I will -- hmm, also grant you - ahh! the favour you now ask" I stop

and held the table much tighter as I close my eyes when the vibration increases, the stimulation is too much that I'm about to cum with all this people. It felt so good and so sensual as I stop myself to let out a sound.

No, I can't make it.

I can't finish this.

I know if I'll say a word, I will shout and moan out loud with everyone in this church. My body is heating up, while I look at Lisa, my eyes are begging to atleast make the vibration stop but she only lick her lips, seducing me with her stares and it only made my situation worse.

I'm cumming!! I'm cumming!!

OH JISOOOS I'm cumming

My head was mumbling that words, unable to totally focus when the orgasmic bliss was just a little step away from me. Almost reaching to this, heavenly feeling, that I became so weak and fragile in front of all these people.

I look at Irene, and my eyes are asking for her help. At least if she knew what was happening to me, I just hope she understands.

A chuckled was heard behind her, and it was Seulgi her face was all red from stifling her laugh while looking at me, and my embarrassment consumed me when I knew that she understood what was happening.

She's Lisa's friend, after all.

"Ahhh!!! Ohh my goodness!!!" I let out a scream as I stumbled on the floor when the vibration became much stronger, sweats damp my uniform as the heat took my body.

"Please stop, oh God Lisa, stop it," I mumbled under my breath while almost everyone went to me, wanting to help me get up. I even heard my mother wanting to call 911, but I don't need it.

I need to cum and not that emergency hotline!!

"I'm okay", I repeatedly said as I hold Irene and my face went closer to her ear.

"Ge- get me -oh! Get me ohh --out of here, please", I beg already holding her body for support. I can't walk the pleasure is too much its driving me crazy. My sanity is losing because of what Lisa have been doing to me.

Irene nodded eagerly as she help me out of the platform, my knees buckles as I tried to walk. My lips are all swollen because of too much biting so that I couldn't let out the moans that keeps getting out of my mouth.

I look at both of my parents assuring them that I'm alright while smiling slightly at them. They were trying to hold me but I already walk out leaving them behind.

"What happened Jennie? Why are you shaking??" Irene asked in panic as she held my waist but I couldn't have the strength to answer her as the vibration become much more stronger.

Endless sweats drops from my skin as I grip her uniform tightly. My chest are rising up and down as I try to catch my breath.

"Let me handle her", I flinched when I heard Lisa's voice infront of us. She was looking at me intently while her hands are inside her pockets.

"Are you sure?" Irene seems hesitant to give me but Lisa already held my waist and pull me towards her.

I gasp loudly when I felt her hands touch my skin, her warm hands caressed my waist, securing me closer to her.

I looked at Lisa as she nodded her head and gestured the people in the church who seemed to be in chaos.

"Fine, just take care of her," Irene said before she ran back inside, and I felt scared when Lisa forced me to stand up properly.

"Cum", she whispered into my ear and really don't know what she meant if it was cum or come but my body shakes and hugs her tightly while my face is buried on her neck and her hands are wrap on my waist.

"Oh God!!"

"Oh God Lis~ Lisaaa", I chanted repeatedly while my body starts to shake, my mind loses focus, my thoughts were all blank and I'm about to collapse on the ground if she was not holding me securely.

"OHHHH!! LISAAAAAA!!", I moaned out loud, unable to stop myself while I grip her shirt tightly, my saliva drools from my mouth making her shirt wet but she couldn't even careless and she still didn't turned off the toy in between my legs, prolonging my orgasm much longer.

"You're going to be the death of me," I managed to say before I felt her carry me on her arms.

.

# Chapter 19 (M)

Jennie's POV

"Where are you taking me?" I asked all weak and breathless while I wrapped my arms around Lisa's neck, my face still buried in it, smelling her scent that made me crazy for her.

What happened in the church was pure torture. It was all too much, the feeling of desire and lust that I have to endure to not cum inside the Holy place was so hard. But still, the thought Lisa might have enjoyed playing with me still won as I'm carried by her.

God save me, I'm so crazy for this woman.

"In my car," she answered and held me properly. As we walked towards the parking lot of the church while the mass was still carried on despite what happened.

I remain silent as I watch Lisa's face. She looks so serious while her jaw clench and her eyebrows furrowed, making her more attractive and handsome.

Lisa gently put me inside the passenger seat, settling me in, and she even buckles my seatbelt for me. Then I looked at her as she walked out and settled on her own seat.

She was about to turn her car on, but I immediately unbuckles my seatbelt and settled myself on her lap, straddling her while I held her face. She looks amused by what I did, but nevertheless, she smiles slightly, and her hands go to my waist, caressing it.

"You played me so well," I said to her while batting my eyelasehes, wanting to seduce her.

Lisa smirked and held my neck, gripping it tightly but only enough not to hurt me. We stared at each other's eyes, so serious while the

place started to get hot. The toy in between my legs was no longer vibrating. However, passion and desire still linger in me.

"You like it, don't you?You like it when I play dirty tricks on you," she said while her breaths were so loud and deep.

I stared at her eyes as it dilated while she looked at me, wanting to hear the thoughts that's inside my head. Because to answer her question, I do. I do like it when she's playing with me.

"What do you think?"I asked instead, and I felt her breathed hitch as she moved her body, wanting to get comfortable until I loudly gasped when her hard shaft was pressed against my centre.

Goodness, I'm still sensitive

"What I think doesn't matter, Jennie. As long as you enjoyed, "she answered, that made me frown and pout in front of her, and suddenly, she looked so serious while staring at me, the grip in my waist tighten and she held her breath.

"Why?" I asked confusedly, worried that I did something wrong to offend her, but she only shook her head and kissed me hungrily, I was so surprised that I froze by what she did.

"Don't frown and pout in front of me. It makes me want to fuck you right here," she said while grunting, it was like she's in pain that she's trying to stop herself from doing something.

I took Lisa's hand and put it on my face, and I melted when she carress it with her thumb while we looked at each others eyes, desires, and lust was so evident.

"Why don't you do it? What's stopping you?" I asked. I mean, she's making me confused. She said she wanted me, that she desired me, and that she had all the opportunity to do it with me, but still I remained untouched.

Lisa breathed deeply, pulling me closer to her as she rested her head in my neck, smelling my scent and kissing it slightly.

"Lis," I called her name sensually, starting to lose focus as I tilted

my head, giving her more access to her kisses.

"Please answer me," I told her, and I lost all my strength while holding her head, wanting her to answer me.

She sighed and looked at me seriously and licked her lips, and then cups my face gently.

"You're special. Atleast I wanted to fuck you not in some cheap place but in where you wanted it to be memorable", she answered so serious that I felt her sincerity and honesty.

My heart flutters against my chest as I melted with her words, surprised by her reason.

I thought she was just playing with me. I thought she was scared to touch me and take my virginity that I might go clingy over her when she'll take my innocence. But no, she has different reasons, and it makes me fall for her harder.

"It's already special as long as I'm with you," I whispered as my tears fell, sobbing when I knew that I couldn't get myself away from her. I knew that I'm going to go insane if she'll be gone and leave me.

Her breathing stops and forces me to look at her, wipping my tears away.

"You're beautiful, Jennie, and you're so fucking special. I want to treat you better, " and that's when I kiss her. I kissed her passionately as I held her face, and my tears fell while we moved our mouths in sync.

Her lips that are so soft and addictive made me go crazier for her as we kiss in so much desire that lust ignited between us.

"Oh Lisa~", I moaned her name as I grasped her hair when her kisses travelled to my cheek down to my neck. It feels so soft that I've lost all my senses, having no care even if the mass was still ongoing.

"Please, just me do me Lisa," I beg her, unable to control myself. I just want her, I want her inside of me. It always feels like I'm

missing something, like I'm a puzzle, and she's my missing piece.

Lisa stopped and stared at me while her warm hands went to my back, I felt her grip the zipper of my dress as she slowly unzipped it, her gaze never left mine.

"Do what, Jennie?"she asked, teasing me, slowly pulling down my zipper, and I could only gasp and hold her shirt tightly.

Her eyes, that was wanting me to say the word she always used. But I can't. I can't just curse carelessly just like she does.

"Come on, Jennie, say it," she provoke again. Now my dress went down, exposing my brassiere, and there her eyes settled in it as I saw her gulped before she stared back at me. Her eyes felt so cold and dark, expressing how she wanted me.

I gasped loudly when her hands went to my shoulders, and she slowly took the dress off of me while I stared back at her, wanting the same thing. I held the hem of my dress, exposing myself in front of her.

"Do you want me?" And she nodded eagerly, and her hands travelled to my waist, gripping it tightly, skin to skin while pulling me much closer to her until there was no space left between us.

"I want to fuck you", she said as she swiftly unhook my brassiere off of me. That exposed my breast, just an inch closer to her mouth, and she immediately touched and sucked while she put kisses around it.

My body arched, and my centre tingles because of want and my desire for her. Loud breaths echo inside her car while I grip her hair, pushing her harder, wanting her more and more.

"I want to taste you," she added, and loud gasp goes out in my mouth when she licked my stomach up towards my breast.

A flood of wetness went out in me, gripping her hair tighter and my eyes closed, overwhelmed by this lustful feeling.

"I want to hold you," then her hands went to my legs, softly

caressing it before it went up to my waist, wanting to pull my undies, and I could only whimper and move to give her access but it was hard, because of the space until I heard her groaned in between my chest and ripped my undies apart.

"Lis," I said, shocked to what she did. My eyes opened, and I looked at her. I am clearly not expecting her to do that.

She chuckled as she showed me my underwear. It was so wet, but still, she put it in her nose and sniff it loudly, even her eyes closed, savouring my scent like how she sniffed the drugs back in the club.

I felt embarrassed, especially when she tossed it on her backseat and her hand cupped my cunt and I let out a sound when she pulled the vibrator out of me and my cheeks grew redder when drops of wetness came from it, it was so soak with my own juices while Lisa looked at it with amazement.

"S-stop staring," I said and tried to take it away from her, but she already put her on her front compartment, keeping it away from me.

Both out breathes are so deep and loud that our chests move in sync while we both want the same thing.

"Take me," and she did not need to be told twice when she kissed me hungrily. Both our tongues fight for dominance, exploring each others mouths freely while I hold her chest, gripping it, and her hands travelling and caressing my body.

Goosebumps appear on my skin, shivered by her touch as we kissed in so much hunger.

"Oh Gooood," I couldn't help but moan when Lisa kissed my hardened nipple. My waist moved towards her hardened shaft, wanting friction to collide to fill the desire inside me.

Her tongue played with it, teasing its sensitivity until she sucked my nipple and her other hand grabbed my breast and played with it as well.

I am so lost by my desire that I didn't know that her hand already

travelled towards my centre, and my body arched and held her shoulder when she parted my cunt and swiftly put a finger inside me.

"Lis, oh Lisa," I moaned her name while my eyes clenched, when the feeling of pain and desire controlled my body.

"It- it hurts, but it f-feels so good," I told her and held her head as I kissed her again, feeling bold by my actions.

My waist moves towards her finger, clenching it, wanting to be filled more from her. Lisa grunted and kissed me back, and her mouth suck my tongue, and the sound of her heavy breath made me go crazier.

"M-more!"I shouted, and my desire was filled when Lisa pulled away and inserted two fingers inside of me. The sound of flesh thrusting echoes inside the car, our loud moans spread, blocking the sound of the Holy mass that was still ongoing.

I felt Lisa's hand, moved in and out of me, and the flood of wetness lubricated my insides as it moved swiftly until I felt Lisa adjusted and her hands rubs the upper part of my walls.

"Oh my g- goodness," I moaned in between our kisses when it felt so good and stimulating. It's making my senses lost as I hold her, and my mouth parted open so weak to even kiss her back.

I heard her grunt and suck my breast, giving me more pleasure while she suck my nipple like a hungry baby, and never did she try to stop her fingers from moving inside of me.

"M-more ba-baby add o-one more", I got lost, my sanity left me and was replaced by the desire of my body and got contented when Lisa inserted three fingers and my mouth parted widely, as I drools and felt weak when I felt something teared inside of me, my breath hitch as the pain and pleasure combined and for the nth time, my body loss as sweat drops in my skin and wetness sprayed out off of me.

"Fuck!!", I heard Lisa cursed, amazement was evident in her tone

and I opened my eyes with all the strength I have and was surprised as lots of my juices sprayed towards her.

I stop moving my waist as I look at it, shock that my body can able to do that because of pleasure that she's giving me.

"I- I'm so-", I was about to apologize, but Lisa kissed me hungrily again, grunting and moaning in between our kisses as she moves her hand, in and out of me, so fast and deep that my mind loses focus again, succumb by the pleasure.

It feels so good, so lustful as her fingers glide in and out of me. Sweat drops endlessly from both our skin, and loud breaths keep getting louder and louder while I keep chanting her name.

"Lis- oh Lisa"

"Bab-by, fas-ter, ru-ruin me," I told her, and my body shook when she did it immediately. The orgasmic feeling was so close, and her fingers were deeply thrusting inside, creating this pleasure that I had never ever felt before.

"I- I am cu-cumming. I'm cumming so hard!!"

"Fas-faster!! Don- don't sto-stop", I beg while I look at her, panting so hard while my brows creased in so much pleasure and satisfaction.

"Lis, oh Li-lisaaa!!"

"You- you're mak-making me c-cum so ha-hard!"I pant while I tried to kiss her mouth, and I moaned louder at the contact as my orgasm hit me.

"OH BABYYYYY!! OH YESSSS!!!"

I shouted while I thrust my tongue inside her mouth, and Lisa, oh Lisa, inhaled my moans, stopping me from screaming when my orgasm took over my body.

"Shit! Jennie!!"she cursed inside my mouth as she continued to thrust inside me. I looked down, and I saw how her fingers buried

deep inside, how it slid into my walls, giving me pleasure I had never felt before.

"B-blood," I told Lisa when her fingers were tainted with red, but I only heard her groan against my neck and suck it, leaving kiss marks in me.

"I broke it. I broke your hymen baby, "my heart beat doubles when I heard what she called me. She was breathless, panting even, but what she said it was the first time I heard it from her.

"Re-repeat it. Repeat it ag-again, "I beg while I look at her, kissing her cheeks as she continues to thrust inside me, and my body shakes as a new wave of orgasm took my body again.

Lisa groaned and stared at me, biting her lips while sweat dropped from her forehead, making her much hotter, veins appeared on her neck, which turned me on even more.

"Ba-baby, you're so fucking hot. I'm going to fuck you so hard!!" I suddenly cum because of what she told me, my body shook again as I held her tighter for support. I felt weak, that my body was about to give up while I buried my head on her neck, sucking it to stifle my moans.

"Lisa"

"Lisa"

"I'm yours,"

"I'm yours, baby," I whispered repeatedly, wanting her to feel how sincere I am for her. How crazy I am for this woman.

After a moment, we both stop. Lisa's fingers are still inside me while we both catch our breath. Sweats slides from our skin while our gazed locks together.

"Take me,"I gulped and held her face, wipping her sweats away with my hands.

"Take me to my room, and I want you to fuck me Lisa. Fuck me in

anyways you wanted. I'm begging you, I'm begging you to ruin me,"

.

# Chapter 20

Jennie's POV

Lisa drove me to an unfamiliar place again. After what happened inside the car, we almost got caught when most of the people were walking towards the parking lot. The mass was done, and the church goers are needed to go home.

I quickly hid myself in the backseat of Lisa's car, lying down comfortably while we waited for some of them to go home, and I didn't know that I had fallen asleep on the backseat.

My groan was heard as I tried to get up, and the soreness in between my legs hit me as I realised what had happened earlier.

It was unexpected, but I still love it.

"Where are we?"I asked, but Lisa only smiled and walked out of her car, and I was about to frown when I heard my side open, and she gently guided me out after she helped me dress.

"Are you hungry?" She asked and held my hand as we walked around the beach side to side while our hands interwined.

It feels romantic while the sun is shining towards us. I assume it's already past lunchtime because of how hot it is. Summer is still not done after all.

My stomach grumble that made Lisa look at my tummy, her smile broke out as she held it with her hand. I pouted in front of her,already embarrassed to what had happened, but Lisa only held my face and kissed me, out in a place like this. The strong salty breeze touches our skin as we kiss passionately.

I could not even care if someone knew me. I just want her, I just wanted Lisa to hold and kiss me like this forever.

"Let's go." we were both panting when we parted from the kiss, I saw how her eyes shine and glimmers while she held my face and looked at me, caressing it with her thumb softly.

And again, for the nth time, my heart flutters for this woman. I've fallen so hard, and I think I can't get up.

-

We walked inside a seafood restaurant near the beach she had taken me. All the servants greeted and gave us a seat.

"I hope you don't mind seafood near the beach," she said humourly, and I just giggled on how cute she tried to joke.

I looked around the place and felt in awe on how they aesthetically designed it. Lisa held my hand across the table and smiled at me, waiting for me to answer her question.

We interwined our hands, and I pulled it towards me, kissing the back of it while I settled her hand on my face.

"It's lovely, and also I'm hungry Lis", I told her, and she laughed and moved to sit next to me. Her arms wrap around my shoulders and kiss my forehead.

Surprised was an understatement when she did that. I felt how my heart beat doubles and fluttered against my chest while I moved closer towards her, hugging her tightly, savouring her scent that I've been so addicted even since she came.

"Good afternoon, ma'am. Here is our menu, "we got interrupted by the waiter that I immediately tried to sit properly because of embarrassment, but Lisa hold me tighter and hold the menu for the both of us, while I'm still wrap around her arms.

I smiled shyly at the girl who was kept looking at us. However, I noticed how her gazed almost never left on Lisa.

A surge of jealousy fueled inside me and rolled my eyes at her. My chest tightened on the way she looked.

"Baby," I called Lisa softly, and I heard her humm while she kept looking in the menu. So I moved my head and kissed her cheek, making sure that the girl saw it, but still she didn't even fazed and kept looking at Lisa.

I sighed loudly and moved away from her, and Lisa's brows furrowed on the way I'm acting.

"Everything alright?"she asked and tried to touch my hand, but I didn't mind it, and just took the menu from her.

I just want her to claim me with this girl in front of us. I want her to call me the way she called me back in her car.

"Jen," she called my name, but I just kept looking at the menu until I heard the waitress talk to her.

"Ma'am, have you chosen your order?"

"Not yet, but can you recommend me something?"

"Yes, ofcourse", I heard the waitress say eagerly and even moved to Lisa's side and handed her another menu.

My peripheral vision saw how she moved her head closer to Lisa. She even pointed her hand to their best sellers in this restaurant.

The grip on my hand tightened as I kept listening to their conversation. I was letting out loud breaths, frustrated with what Lisa was acting.

"We have shrimp pasta. It's our best seller. " her tone suddenly changed while they kept talking and talking. It's making me cringe on how she tried to change her voice.

Until I couldn't take it and straddled myself on Lisa's lap. Both of them were shocked to what I did, but I didn't mind their stares and just hold Lisa's face, caressing it sensually.

"Why don't we just go to my room, baby? I'm so excited about how you will ruin me, "I seductively said while I'm kissing her cheek, down to her neck while I looked straight at the waitress.

Her eyes went wide, shocked to what I'm doing. Maybe she didn't see me as this kind of girl because of the dress I'm wearing. I mean, I'm still with my church uniform, and I don't even have underwear in me because Lisa ripped it apart.

But I can't just let her close to Lisa. She's mine. No one can have her other than me.

"But you need to eat Jen. I had tired you, so much, and you need energy for later, "she said that made me smirk as I heard the girl gasp and her cheeks reddened.

I looked back at Lisa as I parted her lips and kissed her in this restaurant even with all the other people around us. I couldn't give my care. I wanted everyone to know that she was mine, that I had own her.

Lisa didn't even react and just kissed me hungrily as well. Her hands went to my legs, caressing it with her soft hands while her tongue invaded my mouth, and we both made out in front of all these people.

"Ehem," we both stop when the waitress fakes a coughed, and I have control myself to not roll my eyes at her.

Lisa groaned and looked at the girl, her brows furrowed in annoyance, while I'm still straddling on her lap.

"Just 2 shrimp pasta and your drinks, baby? What do you like?"When I heard the word came from her mouth, my heart flutters again while I stared at her beautiful face.

"Anything will do," I said while pecking her lips. I was about to get off from her because I already got what I wanted, but she held me tightly and stared back at the girl.

"Just give us whatever you can offer," that's what she said, and gestured her hand like she's shooing the waitress, and I could only gasp when she kissed me back again.

Lisa parted my lips and inserted her tongue inside of my mouth, exploring it without the care to the people around us. We are in

public, and this is not even a place where people normally made out, but still, she did it, we both did it.

"Lis," I moaned when she's already kissing my cheek, down to my neck, and I could only tilted my head to give her better access. I felt her lick it, wetting it with her saliva while giving me marks everywhere she wanted. While I grip on her shoulder tightly as the arousal hit me, her hard shaft rested against my uncovered centre, already wet for her.

"You're so fucking hot when you're jealous" she said and help me settled in my seat and even properly pull my dress for me to cover what I was hiding beneath it.

I interwined both our hands while I rested my head on her shoulder, kissing it before I answered her.

"She keeps on looking at you," I said honestly. I mean, what's the point of denying if that's what I truly felt.

Lisa chuckled and kissed my forehead, and the girl from earlier went back with the foods we ordered. She can't seem to look at our eyes while her cheeks are still tainted with red.

I just smirk at what she's acting and just didn't mind her.

When our food gets settled, we both eat in peace while constantly smiling at each other. Today, I've seen her smile for more than twice, and I could say it was my most favourite view so far.

She rarely smiles, and when she does, it feels like the world glows and stops just to stare at her.

-

"Thank you. Please come again," We just smiled at the waitress when we're done paying, and Lisa gave a huge tip for her.

"She learned her lesson," Lisa whispered in my ear as we walked out, and I just laughed embarrassed to what I did to make the waitress act that way.

"She deserved it," I said, trying to hide my embarrassment by acting tough.

Lisa just smiled and held my hand. We were walking around the place, and the wind brushed our skin while we both looked at the place around us.

Everything looks so beautiful. It was calming and peaceful while we talked about how amazing the place was.

"Lisa," I called her name. We are sitting on a small bench near the beach, still gazing at the view in front of us.

She hummed and looked at me, waiting for me to continue what I wanted to ask. We both look at each others eyes contented to what we have, but still.

"Why did we come here?" I asked curiously because I thought after what I said in her car, she would drive me back in my house and take me in my room just like I said to her.

Lisa moves closer towards me, holding my face while seriously staring at it.

"I wanted to give you time. To reconsider, " she said that made me stare at her, confused.

My brows creased while I held her hand on my face.

"Why? Don't you want me to give myself to you?"I asked, and the nervousness of my chest doubles. I'm feeling scared that she won't want me, just like I wanted her.

"It's nothing like that. The devil knows how I wanted you. How I wanted to thrust myself inside you and rip you apart while you moan my name over and over again, "she whispers against my ears that make me gasp and hold her hand tightly.

Just hearing it from her turned me on. It's making my sanity lost again because of what she said.

"T-then why?" I managed to ask, fighting the desire that surged

inside me. Any moment from now, I might be going to force her to take me in this place.

Lisa smiled and pecking my cheeks until her kisses went down to my neck before she stared back at me. Her serious face made my mind go blank while I tried to fight her intimidating aura.

"You're a child, Jennie. You're young and already have a plan for yourself. Giving yourself to me is like signing your soul to a devil. I'm already ruined, and even though I admit that I wanted to bring you to hell with me. I know in myself that I care for you,"

I never left my gaze as she explained herself. All the words that came from her mouth have made butterflies in my stomach. It was so wild as I continued to hear her words , as I understood what she meant.

"Lisa," I mumbled her name, touched by her words, fluttered that she cared for me.

My phone rang that interrupted the both of us. I look at it, and I become so nervous when I read my dad's name displayed on my phone.

"Answer it," she told me, but I shook my head and turned my phone off instead.

I already made my decision. I'll stand for myself and be with Lisa. No matter who she was, I don't really care as long as I get to be with her.

"I told you. I'll be choosing you no matter what happened. I could go against my parents and even my father. I could sacrifice my dreams for you. I'll be doing what you want. Lis, "I stopped and held her face, caressing my thumb against it, our gazed lock together while my heart continued to beat loudly against my chest.

"I would dare to go to hell as long as I get to be with you," I added sincerely as my heart bursting for all the feelings I had for this woman.

I don't care who she is. I don't really care if she's an addict, an

alcoholic, a smoker, an exconvict, or even if she really killed someone.

I'm already drowned into the feelings I have for her. I've already fallen so deep that I can't get up even if I wanted to.

"Jennie," she said my name while her brows creased surprised to what I said. To what I can do for her. "You're unbelievable," she added, and the smile of our lips broke out as we stared at each others eyes.

"Now Lisa baby, take me. I've already given you the place where I wanted to be taken. It's all up to you. "

I moved closer to her face and kissed her cheek sensually until it went to her ears as I slowly bit it.

"I'm already wet and soaking, baby. I can't wait to be fuck hard, deep and fast by that dick of yours"

.

# Chapter 21 (M)

Jennie's POV

While Lisa was driving on the way to my house, her hands can't be able to behave as it always found ways to caress my legs.

Teasing me by her sensual touch, I could only whimper and get lost by the feeling. Her hand is so warm while she teases my fold, playing with my wetness as she continues to drive and would sometimes look at me just to tease me more.

"Lis~," I moaned when she inserted her finger inside me. My eyes immediately closed and got lost by the pleasure.

"Mo-move it," I demanded, and she quickly obliged, her fingers moved in and out of me, giving much more stimulation in the upper part of my walls as she rubbed it, giving me pleasure and desire that wanted to ignite.

"Don't cum yet", she said that made me open my eyes weakly. I look at her, questioning why? But she only took her fingers away and suck it and continued driving.

"Because you'll be cumming on my dick soon. She'll become jealous, "she joked, and I could only sighed loudly by what she said.

Any moment from now. Lisa will be taking me. My nervousness doubles as I thought about it. It feels like my first lecture in a Sunday Mass. However, this will be my first as well but not in a holy mass anymore.

I could only able to hear the heartbeat against my chest. It feels like the sound coming from everywhere was blocked by this nervousness I'm feeling.

I'm scared I have to admit, but not because of Lisa, but what if I

could not please her just like other girls do? What if she won't be with me anymore after she will take me?

"What are you thinking?" I loudly gasped when I heard her talk. She's been so quiet lately that it added to my own anxiety while I kept overthinking what would happen to us after.

I noticed that the car had stopped and we were just a little far from my house. It was almost 5 in the afternoon, a little late to start this conquest, but what do I know about doing this kind of thing?

"I- I'm nervous," I admitted

She looked at me fondly and carress my face her smile broke out.

"Don't be," that was what she just said, and I could feel myself starting to calm down.

I smiled at her before I nodded my head. Lisa got out of her car and opened a door for me. My hands were shaking while she guided me out, embarrassed that I might turn her off by what I'm acting.

"A-all the maids are on their day off since it Sunday," I try to say while we walk our way towards the house since Lisa parked her car a little far.

She sighed and held my waist, and a loud gasp came out in me while my heart continued to beat louder and louder.

"How about your parents?"she asked, and I could only gulped because the possibility of them that are home is really bad.

"I- I don't know," I answered her, which made Lisa stop and hold my shoulder.

I looked down as the embarrassment consumed me. I wanted this, and yet I still have parents to worry about. I should have told her to do this in her room instead, but I wanted this to be as memorable as ever, and I thought doing it with my room could make me remember Lisa and treasure her if she'll be over with me after what would happened.

I felt her hold my face, forcing me to look at her. She smiled and kissed my lips in the middle of the road in our subdivision and not a little far away from my own house in where my parents could be there. But this time, I didn't feel any fear about getting caught, just her soft lips that's making me go crazier and crazier as we kissed passionately.

"Follow me," I told her after we pulled away. We are both catching our breath while I pull Lisa at the entrance of my house. The guard immediately stopped both of us, wanting for me to leave Lisa outside.

"I'm really sorry, ma'am, but your father said that she's not allowed in here," he tried to explain, but I couldn't just let him do what he was told. I own this house as well, I get to decide who will stay or not.

"Where are they?" I asked first

"They haven't been home since this morning,"

When I heard what he said, relief washed over me. At least Lisa and I can have the house ourselves.

"Remember this, if ever both my parents knew that she came here, I will fire you myself. I'm their daughter they will listen to me over you. So, if you want to keep your job, shut your mouth. Got it?"

I felt how he was scared of me, maybe, because this was the first time I acted like this. I was not an impulsive person, after all, and now I'm acting like a spoiled brat in some high school movies.

We didn't wait for him to respond as I pulled Lisa inside the house, and just after I closed the door, I felt her lips pressed against mine.

"Fuck!! That was so hot," she mumbled between our kisses while her hands already went inside my dress roaming freely against my skin.

"H-he looks scared," I replied while I kissed her back with the same intensity and passion. Lust ignited in the both when I felt how our skin heated in so much desire.

Lisa just chuckled as she carried me by my waist. My legs immediately wrap around her for support while my hands hold her shoulders.

"I'm so hard baby", she grunted as we walked upstairs her hard shaft kept poking my uncovered centre while she kept kissing my neck hungrily.

Moans echoes inside my house, and my mind loses focus as she continues to kiss me and touch me until we both arrive in my room.

"You ready?" She asked while catching our breathes, our stares never did move away even a second waiting for me to answer her question.

"Yes,"

After I answered her, the door opened, and a sound of lock was heard. I squeak when Lisa throws me in my bed, and before I can react, she is already hovering above me.

I could only gasp and open my mouth for her when she kissed me hungrily. It was like she's gritting me, wanting to rip my soul open on how aggressive she was.

"Oh God," I moaned as she pinched my nipple just outside my dress while she kept kissing and licking my neck hungrily.

"I told you. You can curse," That was what she said before she took off her shirt and threw it away and held my face before she kissed me back again.

I'm losing my breath as we continue to kiss. I can't keep up on the way she was acting. She's so agreesive I can't.

"Lis- Lisa I ca- can't breathe. S-low down. "

When she stopped, I inhaled I large amount of air. Gasping while holding her shoulder, temporarily stopping her from ravishing me again.

A chuckle was heard from her, so I quickly looked up and stared at

her face. Amusement was filled in them as we both looked at each others eyes.

"You're just so hot to be taking slow, Jennie. I've suffered long enough, " she explained while grinning, her white teeth showing up and sitting next to me.

Embarrassment filled me when she said it. Well, yeah, kind of because most of the time, she's the one who always touched me and took me to the overwhelming of desire and lust.

"Can - can I at least breathe?" I asked, and Lisa smiled and held my face, our nose touched, and she pecked my lips.

"You can even scream if you want," That was what she told me before she kissed me again, and this time, it was soft and loving.

She kissed me slowly while she carress my face, rubbing her thumb against it while we moved in sync. Her tongue thrusted inside my mouth and explored it. Her hands that were so warm went down to my neck and tilted it.

"Oh, Lisa~" I moaned her name when she slowly kissed my neck. Her tongue licked it sensually, which made me lose my sanity again.

My hands moved in their own when they went to Lisa's shoulders, exploring her body, touching it down to her stomach, and there I rested my hand and carress her abs, it feels so good and hot to touch.

"Jennie," she whispered my name so close to my ear before she softly bit it.

"Strip for me"

I nodded my head and kneeled on my bed, I looked at Lisa while I held the hem of my dress, completely taking it off of me and my brassiere that was left to cover my body I took it as well, not even bothering to look away from her gaze. I stripped in front of her for the first time. I didn't feel any embarrassment, just this desire that I have for Lisa.

"You have no idea how hard I am right now," she mumbled against her breath and quickly kissed my breast, giving me pleasure while she's caressing and kissing it gently. Sucking and licking my nipple, stimulating the familiar desire of lust that made my mind lose its focus.

"Lis- please take me already." I couldn't stop myself, to say that to her. I'm done with all the touches she has for me, and now I wanted her. I wanted her to take me in any way possible

She groaned and pulled out. Her eyes that were so cold are now filled with so much lust. It screams want, and desire, by the way, she stares at me, wanting to ruin me as soon as possible.

I went closer to her as she stood in the front of the bed. I was kneeling as I open her button and unzipped her jeans and my gasp was heard when her hard cock sprang to life as I slowly take off her clothes.

"Touch it," Lisa said, already naked and her cock that was just a few inches away from me.

I gulped before I looked straight up at her. Her eyes scared and turned me on at the same time as I continued to look at her.

My hands were shaking as it went to her shaft. I touched the hole first, that made Lisa shudder and hold my shoulder when I felt her knees weaken.

Satisfaction was filled in me when I saw how sensitive she was, on how hard her dick was. It was so veiny that I felt scared if this could really fit inside me.

I stroke it with my bare hands, as white substance came from the tip and I used it as a lubrication to pump her shaft, her loud groan was heard as I continue what I'm doing. Her eyes were tightly closed and her mouth parted open,letting out sounds of delight as I continue to pleasure her.

"Shit!! Jennie", she mumbled as she shuddered and weakly held my hand, stopping me from stroking her shaft again.

"Enough. I want to put it inside of you", she said and my heart doubles again in nervousness when she said it.

It's time.

Lisa kissed me again, parting my mouth as we both moaned of the pleasure and desire of our body. Both our centre wants something.

She gently laid me in bed, hovering on top of me, but she was still standing on the floor, pulling me by my waist closer towards her hard shaft.

I felt her dick poking in my entrance, sliding to my folds teasing me as we both moaned because of the pleasure.

It feels so good and soft. My mind went blank as pleasure succumbed to both of us. The sound of my wet folds and her hard shaft was heard as she continued to slide it, lubricating it with my wetness.

"I'm going to put it in," she whispered in my ear, kissing me softly, down to my chest and back to my lips, and I eagerly kissed her back.

"Do it," I said and held her face, our gazed lock together, and our mouths were just inches apart.

Lisa nodded and kissed me again before we both looked at our centre while she guided her dick inside me.

"Aw!"I can't help but to let out a sound of pain when she slowly enters my opening, and I felt her stop and look back at me. Contemplating to continue or not, but I kissed her again, passionately while I provoked her, moaning in between our kisses and our tongues fought for dominance as we lost ourselves in this heated kiss.

"Ahhhh!!"I shouted when she slowly entered inside of me. I was like, torn apart because of how big she is. I felt so full as I looked down and saw a big bulge in my abdomen.

It's so big, slowly taking me, penetrating my walls, as floods of my

wetness went out of me.

"Lis, oh Lisa baby," I panted in her mouth as we kissed hungrily again her waist moved to thrust inside me more, and her groaned was heard. I saw how her face expresses delight as what she's feeling.

"It's so tight. Fuck!!!" She grunted before she kissed me again, moving a little faster than before while her face moved towards my neck, licking every part of my skin as the pain slowly subsided and pleasure took over my body.

"Oh, faster!!" I can't help but to seek more, wanting to feel her more inside me, wanting it fast enough to ruin me.

"Jen!! Ba-baby, "she said and looked at me. Sweats dropped in both our skin, and her veins showed on her face while I saw her hold her breath.

"You know I fuck hard. Just shout whatever you want because I'm not going to be slow. I'm going to fuck you so hard that you will seek my cock inside of you every single time" , she said breathless and her chest was pounding so hard against mine before she kissed me hungrily again and stood at the end of my bed.

"Oh shoot!!" I let out a sound when she pulled me towards her. I'm spreading my legs wide open for her, exposing myself to Lisa. Already taken by this demon in front of me.

I felt her hand go to my waist, holding me securely and her stares that were filled with so much desire and lust penetrating my soul. It was like she wanted to just let go and break me apart.

"Fuck me now baby. Fuck me hard!!" I shouted at her, already losing my patience on how she's so soft to take me.

"Please!! OH Goooood!!!"

I bit my lips when Lisa pushed inside me suddenly, thrusting so deep that my eyes rolled is so much pleasure. It feels so good, it was so pleasured, so intense.

"Fuck Jennie. You're so tight!! , she roared and continued to thrust inside me. Her sweats were falling endlessly from her skin, while her eyes were closed and her mouth was partly opened.

I felt how her shaft entered again, going to the place I never knew I had. It feels so tight inside me. It was like I was squeezing her, wanting her to go faster.

"Fas - faster, Lisa!!" And I felt like my soul left my body when she did. She thrust in me so hard and fast that my breast moved as I held my breath when the sound of pleasure wanted to go out in my mouth.

"Ohhhh!! Goood!!!" I can't help but shout. It feels so so good, I'm going crazy. I'm going insane as she continues to thrust in me so deep that my whimpers came out loudly. My moaned was getting louder and louder, and Lisa.

"Lisa!! OH, Lisaaaa!!" She was grunting, holding me tightly as she moved faster and faster while I tried to move my waist, taking her more inside me. My hand tried to cover my mouth,but I've grown so weak that I just move my hands above me and held the sheet of my bed.

Everything was in bliss. We were both in chaos of our own desire, moving at the same pace. Lisa, she looks so hot even she's so sweaty, and the look on her face screams lust. I felt happy by just looking at her. Her groan is waking up my hidden desire, and I know I'm going to be reborn and be this new person.

"Lisa!!"

"Oh my Gooood!! Lisaaaa!!"

"Oh! Oh! Oh! Oh! God!! Jisoooos!!

"I-- I'm cu-cumming!!!"

My body shakes uncontrollably while Lisa continues to pound into me. Breaking me apart with her hard and deep thrust, her groans were getting louder as well. The veins on her neck were about to pop.

"Shit!! Jennie, keep shouting!! Moan my name, baby!!"she told me and kissed me hungrily while she never stopped thrusting, holding me tightly, gripping on my waist that I knew it would leave bruises after this.

"LISAAAA!! AHH!! AHH!! HMMMMM!!" I obliged what she wanted moaning her name, shouting on how she made me feel so good. I'm so lost. This isn't me, but God forgives because I know I kept wanting this with her. I'll keep wanting this with Lisa.

"Ohhhhhhhhhhh!!!!! JISOOOOOOS CHRIIIIIIIISTTT!!!" I shouted when my orgasm hit me. It hit me so hard that my mouth left open, drools keeps dropping while I hold Lisa's head, gripping her hair as my body shakes while I hold my breath, succumb by the pleasure.

"IT FEELS SOOOOO GOOOOOOOD!!!

"OHH!! GOOOD I- I AM SO SORRRRYY!!"

Lisa covered my mouth with her hand, stifling my moans while she gestured me to lay low. Until I heard the gate being opened and the sound of the car door slams shut.

"Lis," I called her name, as panic consumes me, but still she never stop thrusting. Her loud breaths were just coming out from her mouth, but still, my parents.

"Fuck!! Jennie!! I'm cum-cumming so hard!!", she grunted before I felt her tongue inside my mouth, sucking it to stifle her sound and a new wave of orgasm came over me again that made me lost focus and my body shook for the nth time today.

"In-inside me, inside me Lisa, cum inside me", I said breathless while I kept holding my moans as my orgasm never stop. I felt Lisa's legs shake, her grips becoming tighter while she looked at my eyes, it screams pleasure as she cum inside me. Her warm liquids sprayed in my walls that I felt contentment before her body fell down towards me.

"Jennie? Are you in here? We've been looking for you, "I heard my mom's voice outside my room, knocking on it loudly while the beat

against my chest was much worse

"Lis, what should we do?" I asked her, but I only heard her groan and kiss my neck. Her hands started to carress my body sensually while both caught our breath.

I can't think straight. My mom is just behind that door, and Lisa, she's not helping.

"Tell your mom, that were not yet done fucking", she told me that made my eyes went wide and the sound of the keys rustling just behind my door made my heart beat stop.

"OH God help."

--

Did I really write this?

# Chapter 22

Jennie's POV

"I'm going in," I heard my mother say just behind the door, and she was about to open it, and Lisa was still hovering above me. She's not even moving to at least hide herself that made me hold my breath when the door sprang open.

"Mom!! I'm naked. Mommy, I'm naked. Don't come in!!," I shouted that I heard Lisa laughed and kiss my neck before she looked at me. Amusement was filled in her eyes while she rested her chin on my chest.

I rolled my eyes at her, and irritation filled me as she watched me suffer in nervousness because of my own mother.

"O-okay. I'm sorry. We've been calling you since this morning, and you're not answering your phone," I heard her say, and relief washed over me when my door closed again.

Lisa stood up, and I bit my lip. She pulled herself away from me, I even felt it slide in my walls, and before she could take it off, she even thrusted playfully again as her grin showed out and winked at me.

"Lisa!!"I whispered, frustrated by her actions.

Seriously, she's not helping.

She gestured her hand for me to take, and a flood of wetness flowed down to my legs as both our cum mixes together.

"Hot," I heard her mumbled while she kept staring at my legs. My cheeks immediately flustered to what she was doing.

"Are you saying something, dear?" I heard my mom say behind the door.

"Nothing, I'm just going to change, okay?"

"Do it fast. We're going to talk. We are so worried about you. "

I only gulped when I remembered what happened in the church. Lisa played me so well, and I'm sure my parents thought that I'm sick or something. I just shouted, okay, and I heard her footsteps that were walking away in my room.

"Thanks God," I let out a sigh while I stood up and held Lisa's shoulder when I felt weak and the soreness in my centre became much worse.

Oh, my pearl, she's been so used this day.

"Are you alright?" She asked worriedly, gone with all her playful grinned while she held my face and waist to help me not fall.

I smiled at her seriousness, she looks so handsome when she was acting like this, and she's so cute when she was so playful.

"I'm so sore. I need rest," I pouted and hugged her waist while I looked up at her.

She looked down at me and pecked my lips, and she even arranged my hair before she rested her forehead against mine.

"Tell your mom you're sick. I'm sure she'll believe it, " she tried to suggest, and my smile showed on how cute she was in trying to make me lie towards my mother.

I sighed and hugged her tightly, savouring her scent, remembering it in my head to never ever forget how she smelled because she really smelled so good. Even sometimes, cigarettes could mix up with her scent, but it doesn't even made her smell bad, world is so unfair.

"You've taken my virginity," I told her that made her chuckled and held my waist, pulling me gently and staring at my eyes.

Lisa smiled at me. It was such a beautiful smile that even her eyes glowed while she continued to look at me. It was like she's picturing

me in her mind as I get shy on the way she looked.

"Let's have a date tomorrow," she said suddenly, which made my eyes go wide.

"Are you serious?," I asked, and Lisa nodded eagerly, and I could only squell and hug her tighter while she carried and spin me around my room.

It felt like my chest was bursting in so much happiness. Everything feels like a dream. Everything feels so good to be true as Lisa holds me securely as we both share laughter and giggles together inside my room.

"8 am, sharp. I'll be waiting for you to pick me up, " I told her, and she nodded in agreement before she kissed me on my lips.

The kiss was soft and gentle, it feels like I'm floating in a soft cloud while we shared the kiss together. There was no lust ignited in us, but just this sweet and beautiful kiss that I will forever treasured.

---

Jisoo's POV

I kept calling Lisa's phone for the whole day, and it didn't even ring. I wanted to tell her something so urgent that needed to be discussed as soon as possible, but I can't seem to reach her out.

What's this girl had been doing was that she couldn't even charge her phone.

I sighed loudly and put my phone down aggressively while I held my head. My migraine it attacking me again.

"Lis, you won't believe what just happened today."

---

Jennie's POV

"You're late," I told her when she arrived in front of my gate. My

dad had already left, and my mom was still sleeping, and the guard that was in charge was already scared of me, so I guess it's safe for her to fetch me on my own house.

She playfully rolled her eyes while pecking my lips. Her hand immediately guided my waist as she opened her car door for me.

"For 5 minutes," she tried to argue and help me put on my seatbelt before she walked and sited on the drivers seat.

She smiled at me before she started her car and while on the road she held my hand and kissed it from time to time while she tried to snatch glances at me.

My heart felt so full as what she's acting. I would never fathom her to be this sweet and gentle. I mean, she's Lisa, I've known her to be this cold and dark that you wouldn't dare to mess with her in any way possible, but now she looks so sweet and fragile, as she continue to drive her car, even her look was changed when she wearing formal white clothes now. She looks so clean and fresh as she glows together with the sun on this beautiful day.

"You're so beautiful." I can't help but to say that to her, which me her slow down and look at me, her white teeth showing up and shocked expresses her face.

"Stop complimenting yourself," she tried to fight and even winked at me, which made me laugh, and went closer to her face, pecking her cheeks before I went back in my seat.

It went silent after that, but the place sounded so peaceful. I'm so happy and everything felt so good. I have never been this so happy my whole life. Never did part of me felt like I'm contented with what I have and now, it feels like I found my missing piece, and that was her. That was Lisa.

"What happened after I left? Sorry I didn't get to call you. I lost my phone, and I don't know where I put it, " she said to me.

Lisa didn't stay over the night because she told me she didn't want my parents to get suspicious over me and even bluntly said that if

she will stay over she knows she wouldn't let me rest and she's just going to do me over and over and she's worried that I might not get enough sleep. I've been so used yesterday ever since the morning mass, and it was the most humiliating time of my life, but I could never deny that I enjoyed it as well.

"Nothing much, they are just worried about what happened, and I told them it was just severe dysmenorrhoea," I explained to Lisa, and she nodded her head while she looked at me amusedly.

I glared at her playfully because I knew she would tease me again about what happened in the church.

"What?" I just rolled my eyes at her on how playful she is, sighing contentedly, hoping days like this would never end.

---

"Wow, this tastes so good," she mumbled while she ate her breakfast. Her eyes scream delight as she continues to eat more.

"It's just a pancake. Don't overreact." I said and pecked her lips, wipping the syrup away.

Gosh, she doesn't even look like a 28 years old woman, and she even acted like a little child, and if not with her tattoos on her arm, she would really look so innocent.

Lisa pouted and kissed me again, holding my face as she kept giving me kisses after kisses that I eventually knew that she's spreading the syrup on my mouth as well.

"Yah!! Lisaaa!!," I scolded her, holding her face to stop her from giving much more kisses but she only held my hand and pushes me on the ground, she's hovering on top of me while my hands were locked with hers above my head.

Lisa and I decided to have a picnic to the first place she took me, the sun was not too hot and its lovely to have a picnic near the rice fields so this what we did first as we ate the breakfast I cooked for the both of us.

My heart fluttered for the nth time today as we both looked at each others eyes. Her cold stares are all gone and already filled with these beautiful glimmers while we continue to stare at each other.

"You're so beautiful," she told me, she looks so serious when she said it that my heart skipped a beat while our gazed locked together.

She took her hand and held my face, cupping it gently, and her face moved closer towards me until I felt her lips touch mine. I whimper silently as we kissed softly, my chest pounded against my chest in such peaceful rhythm, and our eyes were tightly closed.

Her lips moved against mine, melting with the way she held and kissed me. Parting my lips with her own as we breathed through our nose.

There was no lust involve, there was no desire but just this feeling of contentment as we continued to kiss passionately.

"You made me so happy," I told her when we broke off our kiss. I saw her smile and kissed my forehead, which made eyes closed overwhelmed by such actions from her.

Lisa pulled away after a moment, and we both finished our breakfast together . This time, she's going to decide where we will be going.

"Come on! Tell me. " I tried to persuade her, while she drives, and I keep on grunting playfully when she's laughing and teasing me.

"Lisa!!" I called her, but she only stuck her tongue out playfully before she continued to drive.

I was so surprised when she did that. It was so cute she she did it that I literally squell and held her face while I moved closer to her. I keep on kissing her cheeks endlessly.

"Stop," she told me, but I can't help it. She's so adorable. I wanna keep her in my pocket.

"We are here," that made me stop and I looked around the place,

and my eyes went wide when I saw a tattoo shop across the street.

"You're kidding," I mumbled against my breath and was about to talk to her, but she already went out and opened the door for me.

She kept on grinning while she guided me out of her car, and her hands quickly went to my waist, securing me as we got inside the shop.

"Good morn - oh doc Lisa," a woman that looks the same age as me greeted her and ran toward us excitedly.

Lisa took her hand away from her as she hugged the girl tightly.

"What the", I mumbled against my breath when I saw how closed they were. I mean, she's so young. Lisa wouldn't dare to make her one of her girls, right?

But I'm still young as well.

I've seen enough of their clinginess that my irritation took over my body and pulled Lisa closer to me, securing her on my back while I smiled fakely to this child.

"And you are?"she asked, trying to intimidate me, but I'm all done with my good girl phase, Lisa's mine, and she should know where she stands.

"She's my wife," I stopped when I heard Lisa answer. My heart skipped a beat when I stared at her, shocked to what she just said.

But she only winked at me and held my waist before she forced me to look at her and peck my lips in front of the girl I'm jealous of.

"No shit! Are you serious? " I heard the girl shout that it made me back in my trance. However, shocked was still in me, unable to process what Lisa just did.

"Yeah, Ella, keep it a secret," Lisa answered as she pulled me toward the place to where everyone gets their tattoos.

I heard her guided Lisa to seat properly, wanting to take her shirt

off since Lisa wanted to be tattooed near her chest and I'm stopping myself to not get jealous over this girl after what Lisa told her, I mean I'm already her wife.

She already claimed me.

I gulped hard when Ella sanitised Lisa's upper right chest, just bellow her collarbone, and I felt scared that she might hurt my Lisa.

"Wa-wait how old are you?," I can't help but to ask and she was still just putting a label over it, but I need to make sure Lisa is in good hands especially that her chest was not really exposed to tattoos, it was only her left arm that was filled with it.

I saw Lisa chuckled and held my hand, and the girl even playfully rolled her eyes at me.

"I'm 16, and I know what I'm doing so please stop fussing around," she sass and I'm controlling myself to scold her, she's so much younger than me, how dare her treat me this way.

"She's just doing her work, baby. Let her, "Lisa stopped me when I was about to scold Ella, and I controlled myself to not squell and let out my smile when Lisa called me baby in front of this kid.

Even scared,I still sat comfortably next to Lisa as I looked at her getting tattoos on her chest. My eyes keep squinting as I see how painful it is, as the needle keeps on touching her bare chest.

I felt worried for Lisa when she kept grunting silently that veins showed on her neck until I couldn't take it and just look away from them or else I might just pull her away and stop her from getting new tattoos.

"All done," I heard Ella say as she cleaned her tools, and my eyes went open when I saw my initials tattoed on Lisa's chest.

"JRJK," I read it, and my eyes started to waters as I stared at Lisa, who was just smiling at me.

She stood up and held my face, wipping my tears away, and my eyes immediately closed when she kissed my forehead.

"Why?" I asked in between my sob while I tried to look at her. She hugged me tightly and rested her chin against my head, I even felt her kiss it before she pulled away gently.

"You owned me, that's why," and I just looked at her seriously while I softly carress her new tattoo in her chest.

"You're unbelievable," I told her that made her laugh and kissed me passionately.

Her hands went to my waist, and my eyes immediately closed while I wrapped my arm around her nape, pulling her closer towards me.

It's official I've fallen in love with this woman.

"Oh, stop with the PDA already." we both stopped and laughed when we heard Ella's grimace about to what we did.

---

The day went well, and Lisa already drove me home after our date. Everything went so good and suprising, she made me so happy, and I'm still not even over from the fact that she tattooed my initials on her chest.

It was like a commitment to both of us. That she let me owned her, that she's willing and I've been thinking on having a tattoos as well, with her name but by just the thought of the needles shudders me so I'll just express to the world that she have me, that I'm hers too.

"Thank you so much for today, baby," I told Lisa inside her car when we arrived at my home. I felt so contented with how we spend our day. Everything feels like I'm floating in fluffy clouds on how she made me feel.

"Thank you too. I enjoyed spending time with you, "she mumbled and held my face, pulling me closer until our lips touched. We kissed passionately, which made my heart beat louder again, that I'm filled with so much happiness towards this woman. We kissed in sync slowly. Her lips touched mine as we both moved our heads, wanting this kiss to last longer. It felt so good I didn't want to part away from her.

I love Lisa, I love her so much.

"Bye." I waved my goodbye, and I even heard her horn before she completely drove away.

My smile never left my face even after I went inside but my heart shudders when I saw my dad angrily glaring at me, pictures of me and Lisa was scattered on the floor, even my mom was looking at me with so much shock and disgrace.

.

# Chapter 23

Lisa's POV

I was about to park outside when I got confused when I saw Jisoo's car just beside the gate.

We don't really have an appointment to meet today, and if we have something to talk about, she could just call me.

"Hey," I greeted and kissed her cheeks before I walked towards the couch and sited.

This day was really something. I can't even remember when was the last time I was happy, that my soul felt like it rested when I'm with her.

"Why are you here? Is there any problem?"I asked, hoping that she didn't come here to give me problems.

Not now that I'm already working with myself.

With Jennie

I was not expecting her to stay with me after what happened back in the club. The girls who were hovering over me were never meant to be there. They just suddenly came as I tried to relieve my frustration for those days Jennie left me when I thought that she believed what her parents had been spreading about.

What's worse was that Jennie arrived as soon as all those bitches starts touching me. I really meant to kill Seulgi for letting Jennie know where I was, that she caught me in that kind of situation. However, amusement filled me as I saw how she got jealous and got possessive and how she claimed me with all those girls around.

She just looks so hot that I wanted to provoke her, that I wanted her to reach her limits and show who she really was. That she was not

this good girl her parents raised her to be, that she was more than that.

Also, it was not my intention to hurt her that much and, to let her see how I interacted with other girls, because ever since she came, I haven't thought anyone aside from her, it was just I need to see how much she can handle. I wanted to see if she would stay if she saw how an asshole I was. I let her see everything in me, scarring her, wanting her to get mad, to rage, and let her burst after everything I've done and what I appreciated her the most was she never left me, she stayed even after what happened and I admire her so much for that. She proved to me that I could change and that I could be happy again with her. Even with all my flaws, she accepted me without any judgements.

Now, I wanted to take care of her, to let her feel special, like how she made me feel. She's precious to me, and I know anytime by now this could ignite into something I didn't know I could still do.

I felt Jisoo walk and stood in front of where I was sitting. Her hands were on her waist while her she looked at me, her expression seemed bothered. It feels like she's stopping herself from saying something.

My heart starts to hammers nervously. I never knew that after this day, I would have to endure pain again and another stress that I needed to face.

"Tell me," I stood up and faced her properly. I'm all done acting scared and hiding with my problems. I need to be brave for once because there have been reasons to be worth risking for.

Jisoo sighed and held my face. She looked so worried as she carress it with her thumb.

"Y- you're starting to be happy again," Instead, she stated the obvious, her eyes watered, genuine to the happiness she had for me.

I had to look away from her, unable to take how much she knew about me, how much she knew that despite how I tried to change my personality, Jisoo always knew everything.

"Lisa," she mumbled my name hesitantly.

While I could only sighed and hold her hands on my face, wanting to be brave on what news she wanted to tell me.

I looked at her, gesturing that I wanted her to continue. To just get to the point and tell me what she wanted to say, that she even really took the time and effort to come here.

"I- I saw her," she said as tears filled her eyes.

My brows furrowed on who she meant. So far, I don't have any woman that could make Jisoo as sentimental as this.

"Who?," I asked curiously, and her tears finally dropped, and she told me the name that I wanted to see again.

"Chealse, I saw her Lis, she's alive,"

---

Jennie's POV

"D-dad," I mumbled as I tried to fight my nervousness in me, as I tried to fight how scared I was as I looked at my fathers glaring eyes.

I slowly walked towards him while I tried to hold his arm, but he moved away and huffed loudly.

"I- I'm sorry," I apologised as tears fell from my eyes. I'm hurt to see how they looked at me that way. They are my parents, and I care about what they think.

My father clenched his fist before he looked at me and my mother. The pictures that were still scattered on the floor scared me much more. It was all taken on the beach where Lisa took me, and that just happened yesterday.

It was us kissing in the restaurant and at the beach.

"I can't believe you, Jennie. I told you many times to stay away

from that woman. I trusted you, and what did I get? This?!" He shouted and stomped the pictures angrily. Even my mom looked at my dad, shocked to what he's doing because dad had never been angry like this.

My tears continue to fall as I look at him, my heart clench painfully on how he could shout at me, on how he could make me feel that I disappointed him just because I've been with Lisa.

"I- I tried dad. I really do, but I- I just can't, " I told him honestly, while I tried to stop and hold him, but still he shoved me away.

He pointed his finger at me, his brows furrowed in

disappointment that I couldn't bear him to look at me that way as I tried to ask for help from my mother. Fortunately, she smiled at me while she slightly nodded her head.

"Taylor, just let your daughter," and I couldn't be so grateful towards her that I ran and hugged my mommy.

"Seriously? Are you going to agree with this?" Dad said in disbelief while he held his head, and I could only bow down, regret that I made him feel that way, but Lisa, she made me so happy as well.

Both of them are all important in my life that I can't seem to choose if I were to pick one.

"Why not? If Jennie wanted to be with her, just let her be. She's already in the legal age," my mom argued back, but unlike dad, her voice was soft, hoping it could at least tame my father.

We both look at him as he continues to fuss, to the point that he literally throws the vase that was near him, causing it to shutter loudly.

I'm shaking while I looked at him. My mind was not able to process what was happening. Lisa and I were just so happy earlier. She made me feel so special and happy that I was not expecting all of this to happen.

"No!!," my dad shouted, and not even bothering to think what my

mother suggested.

I looked at my mom, feeling sorry that my dad treated her this way because of me. But she only smiled gently and rubbed my back, wanting to comfort me.

"She's not good enough for Jennie. She killed someone, Amanda, and you're even the one who investigated that," I was so shocked when I heard what my father said, I don't really know what to feel, it's like they are pointing finger now, wanting to come clean towards me.

My mother looked at me apologetically before she sighed and stared at dad again.

"I just want Jennie to be safe, I'm her mother, and the way I look at this, Jennie is happy with Lisa. Just let them be Taylor, please," I immediately hug my mom at I heard that from her, I was not really expecting her to beg my dad just to make me happy.

But my happiness was cut short when I heard what my dad said.

"I've already called the convent in Barcelona. You'll be flying there tomorrow," my dad dismissively said, and that's the time I didn't know that I could talk back to him rudely.

"No, I won't!!"I shouted

Disagreeing his decisions for me. I've had enough of him controlling my life. I'm done.

"What?," he asked unbelievably, his brows creased in so much frustration while he looked at me.

"Enough, dad, just let me be with Lisa," I tried to say, but he only huffed and glared at me.

"She's not good for you, Jennie. Look at this, look at you. This isn't you. You're supposed to be this fragile little angel, and yet when she came, what have you turned into?"

"You know it was not my choice to be a nun,"

"Jennie," that was my mom, wanting me to stop from saying everything I know.

I stared at my mother, hoping she would let me. That at least I could express what I've been feeling because of my father. I inhaled loudly before I looked at my dad again. This time, he looked so confused about what I meant.

"I heard you and Tito Lawrence talk about my marriage with his son, to expand influenced in our place through my marriage and as I was about to confront you about it", I stopped and wipe my tears, my chest hurts so much when I remembered how he easily promised me to someone I don't even know.

"M-mom stopped me, saying that I don't have any choice but to obey you, and the only option could I have is to be a nun since it could make your presence known, that you have a daughter who will enter a convent soon," I brokedown as I try to stop my sob, bitting my lips so hard but still I cried infront of both my parents.

"Do - do you know what I really wanted to be when I grow up?" I asked him, hoping to at least he knew, that he cared even just a bit, but what I could only see in his eyes was confusement. My chest tightened even more.

"I wanted to be a lawyer dad, and I know you will support me about it, but you're still selling me off for your political reasons, I don't want to get married just because of that. I am more than just being married, just with your obsession with politics!!" I shouted out my frustrations, but I gasped loudly when I felt him slap me.

"TAYLOR!!"my mom uttered and went to me. She even held my face while looking at me worriedly.

"Are you alright? I'm so sorry, " she said and comforted me.

I was so surprised at what happened that I could only feel the numbness on my cheek. I don't know exactly what to do.

"How dare you talk to me that way!! I'm your father, Jennie. I did everything to provide for you, to give you what you want, and this

is all you're going to say to me??"he shouted, didn't even feel remorse about what he did.

While I could just cry on my mother's arms, trying to look away from him because I knew. I would lose my patience and my respect for my father.

"Since the truth has been revealed. I'll continue the marriage you have with Lawrence's son. "

"Are you crazy??!!"My mom tried to protest, but dad shut her off by just glaring at her because we know he's the one who rules the house.

I clench my fist tightly, unable to accept that my dad could treat me this way.

This is just too much. I thought after I told him the truth, he would at least be guilty to me, but no, he's not that kind of a father.

"I won't do it. No matter what will happen, I won't marry whoever man you chose for me. I would rather be a prisoner than be abused by my own useless father. "

Slap~

I closed my eyes when he slap me again. I'm so mentally hurt that I can't able to process the pain for the second time.

But still my decision is final and no one can change it.

"You're a child Jennie you don't know what you're doing!!"he shouted and was about to come closer to me.

Thankfully, mom pushed him away.

"That's enough!!", mom tried to stop him

"No!! It's time she is about to learn. Jennie, put this in your head. You're young, you're just 18 years old, and that Lisa, she's older than you. Just listen to me, Jennie, think about it!! I know what is good for you!! I am your father. "

"No matter what you say, I won't go to Barcelona nor marry whoever you wanted for me. It's my life, and I chose to be with her. "

"She's not who you think she is!!"

"I know that, and I don't care!!"

"She's married!!"

"Wh-what?"I asked, unable to process what he meant.

"She's married, Jennie. Lisa is already married!!"

.

# Chapter 24

Jennie's POV

I quickly ran outside and took dad's car. I've heard both of them called me, especially my mother, but I need to confront Lisa after this.

No, I won't believe that she's already married unless Lisa will tell is to my face. That she's be the one who will confirm it while looking into my eyes.

I was holding my breath while I drove my way to their house, Lisa's grandparents are known in Busan, and thankfully, I won't be having a hard time looking for her.

My heart won't stop pounding loudly against my chest. The pain is slowly breaking me apart, and if ever daddy was not really lying about Lisa, I really don't know if I can still take the pain.

I love her, I do a lot, but just the thought that she's married while being with me is just too much. I would hate her because even though I love it when Lisa noticed me, spends time with me and made me feel special while she knew to herself that she's married it's making my chest hurts, it's like a pain I've never ever felt before and if I do really confirm this, I don't really know what to do.

The grip on the steering was too tight that my knuckles turned white, and I felt how it shook together with the coldness I'm feeling. Scared was an understatement, I felt more than that, I'm anxious, troubled, hurt ,and everything feels just so complicated.

"I need to talk to Lisa," I told their security when I arrived at their place, not even bothering on parking properly.

I don't know why, but he only nodded his head and opened the gate for me. I realised that my heart could beat so much louder to the

point where I couldn't be able to hear everything that surrounded me.

My eyes instantly closed when I thought about what happened in the club. That the moment I twisted the knob

and Lisa was with different women. It was like I've been traumatised about what happened.

I trust her, I trust her so much, and I know she won't do anything stupid. She has her chances, and I know she won't break it.

Please Lisa

I beg you

That's what I thought as I slowly opened their door, and what welcomed me was her and some other woman that was holding her face gently.

My tears immediately fell as I saw everything. My heart clenched tightly that I felt it slowly getting broken and shattered into pieces.

I knew that it hurt, but I didn't know it could hurt this much.

The woman who showed me what reality was, the woman who made me feel like I'm a woman as well, is now holding by a different person.

I thought we're okay.

I thought that she's mine and I'm hers. But I guess I'm the only one who thinks of it that way.

Just as I was about to go out, the woman who was holding Lisa's face saw me, her eyes went wide, and that maybe caused Lisa to look at my side.

Her eyes were all red, surprised that I'm inside their house. A feeling of curiosity mixed with my thoughts when I realised this was my first time to come in here and that I knew nothing about her. She never told me anything about her life.

Instead of walking out and leaving them alone, as a fit of rage ignited in me. I walked closer to them. My hands are shaking in full of anger the more I step closer, and I immediately slap Lisa's face, which makes her stop and look at me bewilderd.

My tears immediately fell as I saw how the woman who was with Lisa held her face worriedly, and Lisa even nodded and let the woman hold her.

It hurts so much seeing her with somebody else that I forget how to be patient, and I just suddenly grab the woman's hair and push her away from Lisa. She grunted, and Lisa was about to help her, but I already held Lisa's hand and forced her to look at me.

"H-how!!? How could you lie and hurt me like this?!!," I shouted. The look on her face became more confused, but the worriedness for her woman never left while she stared at both of us.

I cried harder.

"Jen-nnie? I don't know what you're talking about," she told me and tried to even hold my hand, but I shoved it away and slap her face again.

It hurt so much that I couldn't even think straight. My mind is in chaos while my chest hammers so loudly that I felt it getting more broken.

"I- I give myself to you. I- I promised everything to be better for you. I forget my dreams just to be with you and this? Lisa, why do you have to lie to me?!" I confronted her, but her brows just creased and tried to hold me again, but I just shoved her away for the second time, and I saw her woman looking at us confusedly as well.

I was so angry that I walked closer to her and slap her face, which made her gasped loudly. I don't know who she is, but how dare her hold what's mine, and if ever she was Lisa's wife, she deserves it, Lisa is mine now. She was supposed to be out of the picture.

"Jisoo!"

It feels like the time stops when I hear what Lisa called her.

'Jisoo? What?'

"Are you alright? I'm sorry, I don't know what's happening," Lisa told her and held her face worriedly.

My mind went blank, I don't know what to do.

Who is she?

And who's Chealse? Isn't she Lisa's wife?

I rubbed my face with my hands as I slowly sat down, my knees weakened while my tears continued to fall down endlessly.

"Jennie," I heard.

Lisa called my name and slowly walked towards me. I saw her kneeling in front of where I was sitting and held my hand.

"What's wrong? Because I- "She stops and holds my face, forcing me to look at her.

My chest started to beat on a familiar rhythm when our gazed locked together. It always reacted like this, especially when I'm with her.

She looks so confused and so innocent. Am I wrong? Did I've become too impulsive, and my dad was just lying so that I could hate Lisa?

Forget it. I know I couldn't hate her this much.

"L-Lisa, I think I need to go. Just forget what I said. We were there when it happened," I heard who she called Jisoo, mumbled and quickly left, and Lisa was about to go to her, but I immediately held her hand, stopping her.

"Don't go, please," I can't believe that I really beg just for her to not leave me, but what can I do? I'm so drawn and crazy for this woman.

Lisa looked at me and sighed loudly while she held my face, and I

closed my eyes when she kissed my forehead gently.

And again, my heart beats abnormally just because of her. It feels like it's bursting with all the emotions that I'm feeling. I don't know. I just don't know what to do without her.

---

I remained silent after what happened. I can't seem to talk to her about her life and her past relationships, or whether it's really true that she's married or not.

She was just beside me the whole time, caressing my back to comfort me while I kept crying on her arms for all this pain I'm feeling.

"Let's have dinner first, and we'll talk, alright?" She whispered in my ears that made my heart pounded nervously.

Paranoia takes over my body as I unconsciously nod my head, agreeing to what she wants. But she's right. In order for us to work, we need to talk about everything.

We are both settled on their dinner table while both her grandparents are just in front of us. I keep losing focus on how aggressive Lisa's grandmother could look at me. She's so intimidating and expensive that I can't seem to look at her properly.

"I guess the rumours are true, Jennie?" I literally flinched when I heard her say my name, and the grips on my hands were already moist because of how nervous I was.

I put down my utensils as I looked at Lisa, wanting to ask for her help. She smiled and gently held my hand before we stared at her grandma.

"What can I say? This girl took my heart," she answered, which made me look at her wide-eyed, shock to what she just said.

Took what?

I couldn't really understand what she said to her grandmother

because of how nervous I was but her tone sounds like she's fooling around, so I gently nudged her shoulder and gestured her to act appropriately, but she only smiled and kissed my hand in front of them.

Then we heard her grandpa laugh and was looking at us with amusement. His smile was so genuine, which at least gave me comfort amidst this awkward dinner.

But the table went silent again when her grandma made a noise by putting the utensils down loudly.

I tried my best not to flinch and be not noticeable as possible, but I guess I failed when she looked at me again.

"You know what I mean, Lisa. I don't care whoever you wanted to be with, but not just with a complicated person like her," I gulped hard when her cold voice surrounded the place. Now I know where Lisa took her personality.

I just bowed my head down, embarrassed that I was making their family have conflict because of what I did and because of what I am.

"Grandma, you know that I like everything that is complicated," Lisa tried to argue, and I don't know why, but it feels like she's not even scared one bit. I wanted to stop her from talking back, but there's part of me that I also want to see her fight for me, just like how I fought my parents just to be with her.

"Just let her be. At least Lisa found someone again."

"Grandpa!!"

It feels like my ear rings loudly with the mention of the word 'again' from Lisa's grandfather and the loud voice of Lisa echoing around the place, wanting to stop him from talking.

But why?

The thoughts of marriage came in my head, and pain slowly creeps again while I slowly take my hand away from Lisa's hold. My tears

started to build, and my body felt cold.

I need to get out.

I need to shout this pain I'm feeling, or else I might burst out and get drowned to these unpleasant emotions.

"E-excuse me," I mumbled as I slowly stood up and bowed down at them before I walked out of the room.

I don't know where to go and just kept on walking while my tears fell down endlessly. My chest hurt so much that I wanted to get violent and shout to the pain away.

By what Lisa's grandfather said. It's just confirmed that she really does have somebody else.

She hurts me, she hurts me so much and I can't believe that my heart just keeps on wanting her after what happened. She played me so well, she played with my feelings, my innocence, everything and there's nothing even a small piece that was left in me.

"Jennie," I stopped when Lisa held my hand, and again, my heart beat so much louder for her. This familiar rhythm is making my mind go blank and stupid again.

I closed my eyes tightly before I slowly took my hand away and faced her properly. Her brows furrowed while she looked at me, wanting to know what was wrong about me, about us.

My throat felt stuck as I wanted to ask her questions, and the answer to this would make me worse or not, but who am I kidding?

"A-are you really ma-married Lisa?" Finally, I get to ask her, and I saw how her expression changed and stopped, maybe surprised by my question.

I sighed loudly while I continued to stare at her. I just want her to answer me honestly.

"Please, tell me," I beg when she shows no signs of talking. She was just standing , unable to move, and it was like her thoughts were so

far from the conversation we were having right now. While she tried to look away from me. She seemed bothered, troubled even because of how restless she was

I heard Lisa sighed loudly, and her eyes were so red when she finally looked at me. She seems so hesitant to talk while she bit her lips. Her hands were shaking as she tried to hold me.

"Y-yes.", her voice broke when she finally answered.

..

# Chapter 25

Jennie's POV

It feels like my world stopped when she told me the truth about her status. The pain that I'm feeling doubles as I process what she meant.

It hurts

It hurt so much, but what else can I do?

I'm already in love with her.

Should I just make myself a mistress just for her to be with me? But what I'll become into? What do people think of me?

A home wreaker?

A mistress?

But Lisa, I love her. I do so much that I can take what other people will say to me as long as I get to be with her.

I wiped my tears away as I moved closer towards her. I held her face, forcing Lisa to look at me properly. I can't take it, she hurt me so much but it feels like I'll go crazy if she'll be gone and leave me, or if I chose what's best and I won't be ever to see her again.

"Was it Chealse?" I asked, which made her look at me confusedly. The brows on her forehead creased, maybe surprised to where did I get that name.

I haven't told her about the night that I left. I haven't told her that I heard her mumbled other girls' names on her sleep.

She took my hand away from her face before she walked closer, making us stand just a few inches apart. Her eyes were filled with

mixed emotions. She looked so confused and vulnerable while she continued to stare at me.

"How did you know her?" She asked instead, which made me broken again. Did she really ask that first before my own thoughts and feelings regarding that woman? Regarding why she's married and yet she's making me feel all those emotions and happiness that I only get to experience with her?

My knees weakened as I stepped backwards, while my tears fell endlessly. I can't even breathe properly because of the pain that's been suffocating me.

She tried to hold me, but I still couldn't just accept easily that she made me her mistress, that she hid the truth from me.

"Y-you have all the time t-to tell me the t-truth," I weakly said to her. My knees were about to give up as it continued to shudders.

But she just bowed her head down. She looked so bothered to our situation, but we couldn't just continue everything after what I discovered, we need to address this for us to work. Because I want her, despite what she told me, I still wanted her to be with me. To fight for me.

"Did your parents tell you about my marriage?" She's almost hesitant to asked and I could only roll my eyes to her question.

Seriously? After everything that will be her question? It feels like she doesn't even care about me.

God, do it really hurt this much?

I wiped my tears away as I tried to stifle my sob. The pain was too much that I just wanted to run and leave her alone, but there's always a part of me that I wanted to be with her as well.

Somehow, I'm still hoping that we could still solve this and be happy again, just like how we used to.

I nodded my head while I slowly let out a sound to ask her a question that even I'm so scared for her to answer , but still I need

it. I needed her to answer me so that I could decide whether to stay or not.

"Am I-" I stuttered that I closed my eyes and held my chest, forcing myself to fight the pain that's keeps on creeping inside me.

"Jennie," she called my name, it came out so soft and gentle that it almost melted me again, that I almost lost and just surrender to the feelings I have for her.

I shook my head and opened my eyes, I tried to wipe my tears away and inhaled loudly. Forcing myself to calm down and be strong, just for this time.

"Do y-you consider me as your mistress Lisa?"

Finally, I got to ask while I straightly looked at her, but what surprised me when her eyes went wide and confusement washed over herself.

She held my face and stared into my eyes, our gaze locked together. She looked so serious while she continued to stare at me, while her thumb was gently caressing my face.

My heart keeps beating louder and louder the more she holds me. The more she keeps on making me feel this false sweetness and feelings

She's married, and she's just playing with me because she knows I know nothing about a relationship like this.

But even though I knew everything and yet here I am, I am still waiting for her to explain herself.

"I admit that I have this unholy thoughts about you, I have this desire for you that I have come to the point that I've taken everything, but Jennie-", she stops and force me to look at her when I just bowed down because I can't help it, I'm going crazier that more I continue to stare at her.

"Jennie, listen to me," After she said those, I tried to look at her again, and this time, she smiled and kissed my forehead.

"I know how an asshole I was, but I never thought of you that way. You don't deserve to be called one because you're not my mistress Jennie, "she added that made my eyes went wide and confusedly look at her.

She sighed and arranged my hair properly, tucking it in between my ears before she continued.

"I'm married, yes, and I'm really sorry that I didn't tell you the truth because I'm still not ready, but I guess you deserved to know everything about me,"

Lisa pulled me to one of the benches, I didn't know that we were at the poolside of their house. The cold breeze of the wind made me hug myself as we both settled on our seats.

She moved her body to face me properly. Her smile was still soft when she held my hand and carress it with her thumb. Her eyes were back to before. It was so cold and dark, but still, whenever I looked at it, it kept drawing me more towards her.

"Chealse was not my wife," she suddenly said, which made me stop and stare at her confusedly.

Then who is she? She was calling her name before, and she was so scared when it happened.

"She's was my daughter." When I heard what she said, my heart drums so loudly against my chest. It's just so unbelievable that she had a daughter, and that she's married, that she kept this from all the time when she's with me.

Everything is so complicated.

"Let me finish, okay? Please hear me out, "she interrupted my thoughts and reached my face to make me look back at her.

"I'm married with my high school girlfriend. We were both happy and contented with what we had until she graduated, while I continued my medical degree, but she got pregnant, and that's why we have Chealse", she stops and I just realised that she was crying.

Tears fell from her eyes while her face was all red, and the pain was so evident that cause me to be worried for her.

Lisa, she was in love

That's what I see now. However, I don't know what happened that caused her to be like this? To be broken and in this kind of pain.

"We got married just after we knew her pregnancy, and we were so happy. Everything was just so beautiful that I couldn't ask for more", she broked down and cried harder. My chest feels like it was stabbed many times when I saw her being so vulnerable. She's just so strong and intimidating that I didn't know that she's hurting as well.

I held held her face and wiped her tears away. My heart is so soft for this woman that I couldn't take her crying like this.

"It's alright. You can tell me when you're ready, "I told her, but she only shook her head and moved closer towards me.

She hugged me tightly while she sobbed and cried in my arms. The cold Lisa was gone, and I got this vulnerable baby, hugging me. It feels like she's telling me how the world can be so cruel towards her. Like she wanted me to protect her against everyone who could hurt her.

"B-but happiness was not permanent after all when both of them got into an accident. My mom was there too. The three of them died on the same day, and I was not even there to be with them for the last moment of their life, "

Lisa

I was not expecting that she would have experienced such painful and traumatic scenes in her life. I thought she was just unhappy, troubled with the world around her, but she was just an innocent, beautiful woman, and the world was so cruel to let her feel all of this. She's so hurt, and they easily took her happiness away, the reason she was living, and yet how could

I cried altogether with her. My tears fell endlessly as I thought

about how hurt she must be. On how it was so hard for her to take everything. The family she loved and even her mother, she just lost them in just a day.

"It's alright, I'm here. I'm here, baby. I'm sorry I judged you, "I told her over and over again while I kept hugging her tightly, comforting her the best I could to ease all her pain away.

"Jennie," I heard her call my name and look at me. Her eyes are so puff because of too much crying, but still, her beauty always stands out. There's just no time that she doesn't look good.

"What is it?" I gently asked while I'm holding her face softly and wipping her tears away. Making her feel that I'm here, that no matter what happened and even when everyone will leave, I will always be there for her.

She pouted and buried her face on my neck. I immediately melted by her actions that I just carress her head, giving it kisses until I heard her say something that made my heart in chaos, melting in such a passionate way.

"Don't leave me. Please don't leave me. You've made me so happy, and I'm so scared if you'll ever leave me too. "

---

I hope you're all healed and (M) for the next chapter as compensation.

# Chapter 26 (M)

Jennie's POV

"Baby?"I called Lisa when I felt her calmed down and went silent after a moment. Her chest started to move softly against mine while she continued to bury her head in my neck.

"Hmm?"she hummed and looked up at me. She looks so adorable with her puff eyes that look so innocent while her lips pout.

I smiled at the sight and carress her face before I closed my eyes and kissed her forehead. The grip on her hand tightened around me, it feels like she was shocked to what I did, so I quickly moved away and stared back at her.

"Did I do something wrong?" I asked, but she only shook her head before she took me in her arms and stood up.

I gasped and quickly clung into her, scared that I might fall because of what she's doing.

"Oh God, Lisaaa," I scolded her, but she only smirked and winked at me.

I guess she's back to her naughty self

That's what I thought when she walked near the poolside and gestured to throw me out in the water.

I panic and try to get away from her grip, but she only laughs and teases me more.

"No no no Lisaa it's so cold!!!" I shouted and even pinched her nape to stop her from what she's doing but still. She didn't budge and just kept on teasing me.

"The water feels good, baby. Come on!!"she even tried to pursue

and even walk closer to the platform, and I could only close my eyes tightly because with one wrong step, we were going to fall in that cold, deep water.

I was about to move away from her when she suddenly kissed my lips and jumped into the pool that made me gasp and cling to her tightly. The splashed of water loudly echoed into the place before I was deep down and alone in the water.

I immediately shivered on how cold it was while I tried to hug myself and look for Lisa when I swim up the surface. But I panicked when it was already so long, and I wasn't still able to see her. My heart starts to beat loudly, nervous and scared of what might happened to her.

"Lisa?"

"Baby, this is not a good joke,"

"Lisa, I'm getting worried," I try to dive back in to try and search for her, but I flinched when I felt her hug me from the back, wrapping my waist by her arms while she rested her chin on my shoulder.

"Surprise," she even said and playfully kissed my cheeks, but what she did didn't even amused me. She don't know how scared I was to what might have happened to her.

The pool is so deep and cold, and the possibility of her getting drown it so close to reality and she-

She have the urge to play a prank on me?

I took her arms away and faced her properly. Her cheeks and ears were flushed with redness, maybe on how cold the night was. It's making her more adorable, but no-

Focus, Jennie!!

"You think that was funny?!! You dont know how worried I was. " I scolded her. My heart didn't even calm down from pounding because of how worried I am, and yet she's just going to pull out this kind of game?

The smile on her lips vanished when she saw how serious I was. Her eyes expressed sorry as she tried to hold me

"I'm so sorry, baby. I didn't mean it. I was just having fun, " she tried to explain and apologised, but I didn't mind her and just swim back to the shallow part of the pool, and just before I could get out Lisa already hold my arm and pull me back in.

"Lis!!"I shriek and hold her shoulders tightly, surprised to what she did. I even slap her arms before I glared at her, but her mischievous smile only made me shiver more, not because of the cold but on how the way she stared at me.

"Wh-what?" I was scared to ask that, but she only smirked and moved closer towards my neck, giving it warm kisses while her hand wrapped around my waist ,gripping it in the most sensual way.

"Oh God," I let out a sound when her warm breath touched my skin, and it started to get sensitive on the way she's holding me.

I felt her lips curve in my neck, and she even sucked it first before she pulled away and stared back at me.

My heart was pounding so loudly, not because of how cold the place was, nor of how scared I was earlier but because of the excitement of what she might do.

"Baby," she whispers so soft against my cheek. The heat from her mouth made me grasp her shoulder tighter.

"Wh-what?" I tried to fight back, trying to be mad at her, faking it so she won't think that she could take me so easily after what she did.

But who am I kidding? She's Lisa, I love this woman, and no matter what she'll do. I would always get drawn crazily for her.

I felt her intensely stare at me. Her grip was getting tighter as she pulled me closer towards her until there was not even an inches apart. It was her skin against mine, touching together, sharing the heat under this cold water.

"Let me apologise to you," what she answered made me shudder, that goosebumps appeared on my skin while I looked at her, surprised at what she meant.

Even scared and confused, I tried to ask what she meant, but she only pushed me gently to the most shallow part of the pool, gently guiding me to sit on the stairs under it.

Her face was gently pressing on the right side of my cheek, and her hands were secluding me on both my side, making me in prison by our position.

"You're so hot," she whispered against my ear. It sounds so sensual and seductive. Her warm breath brushed against me, which made me go crazier and hitch my breath.

I didn't talk and just kept my silence, but my breathing was so loud and deep, already in heat to what she's doing to me.

Lisa, she's not even doing anything.... yet

I gasped when her hands went to my shoulders while she's completely looking at me. Her face was just a few inches against mine, and our warm breaths touched together.

"Your dress looks so good on you," she complimented while her gaze looked at me intently. Staring at me up and down my feet, looking much longer on my legs up to my breast, I quickly followed, and I got embarrassed when I saw my nipple hardening, it was poking against my brassiere and dress.

"There's no point in getting embarrassed. I've already seen it. " I've grown much redder when she said that. My hands tried to cover it, but Lisa already got it first and forcefully locked it behind me.

Now, I'm completely immobilised under her control.

"Lis," I mumbled her name and tried to get my hands off from her but she held it tightly and her other hand went to the back of my dress and I could only closed my eyes and bit my lips when she slowly unzipped it.

The place became colder when she's completely done. Her hands immediately roamed on my back and swiftly unhook my brassiere.

"Open your eyes, baby," my heart skipped a beat when she whispered it so close to my ear. My gasp could loudly be heard when she suddenly bit it before she pulled away.

Her serious face welcomed me, her eyes screaming desire and lust while we continued to look at each other.

"Undress for me," she said.

Gone with all her goofy smiles, gone with her adorable antics, and it was now replaced by this handsome and dark woman who captured my heart and the only person that could make me obey with just her words.

I gently nodded my head and did what she wanted. I stripped my clothes off, not even thinking that I'm out and exposed in the poolside of their house in where any minute both her grandparents could come out and saw me naked in their pool and infront of their only granddaughter.

When I did what she wanted, Lisa came closer towards me. Her face was flushed when she held my face and kissed me hungrily, and I could only gasp and take her mouth.

Her hands immediately held on my waist, and mine were wrap on her nape, pulling her much closer as we both kissed in the most passionate way.

Her tongue explores my mouth, diving deeper into my senses that make me lose focus and get drawn to her kisses and touches. My body ignited this beautiful arousal as I pulled her closer to me. Her hard shaft was poking against my centre, already tingling and wet for her.

"Fuck!!", she cursed and kissed my cheek and down to my neck and there she lick and suck it while gripping my body. She looks so hungry as she continues to groan and explore my skin and leave marks all over it.

"Oh, Lisa," I can't help but moan and hold her tighter. My hands are already scratching her shoulder, my eyes are tightly closed, and my senses are all gone as we continue to do this sinful yet amazing act outside.

Her mouth continued to explore my body, licking me down to my collarbone, down to my breast, and she sucked my hardened and sensitive nipple. Her other hand was carresing the other, groping its softness before she moved and suck it as well, her tongue playing with my tip, teasing its sensitivity before she suck it again and leave a mark before she continue down to my navel, kissing and licking me down towards my dripping center.

"Oh baby!!" I shouted and held her head while I opened my eyes and Lisa was now kneeling before me, half her body was in the water, the coldness was not even a problem when the heat from both our bodies was already warming us.

"I'm going to apologize now baby", she seriously said before she opened my legs and kneeled in between it. I don't know why, but I didn't even feel any embarrassment, and instead, I even guided her face down to my soaking centre.

"Come on. Apologize for what you did baby",, I provoked her, making my voice seductive while I straightly looked into her eyes. My teeth are biting my lips while my other hand travelled from my breast, down to my center spreading it with my fingers

I saw Lisa's eyes darkened, her throat moves and her breathes became louder before she moves to my breast, kissing my body down to my exposed center.

"You'll be the death of me", my smile broke out when I remembered that I also told her that when she played me in the church while I'm giving my lecture.

"Lisa!!", my mind went blank when she held my hand that was just in my center and suck it while looking into my eyes, my chest moves rapidly, already breathless with what we are doing.

"Ohhh", I closed my eyes when she guided my hand fingered myself,

I felt it buried inside my cunt and the sound of wetness came out in me.

"Lis!!", I shouted when I felt Lisa's tongue on my clit teasingly before she suck and pushed my fingers deeper inside me.

"Ohh!!", my body moves in sync as I continue to finger myself, Lisa's hand already went to my breast and groped it while her fingers played with my nipples. Her mouth suck my clit and even bit it before she urge me to finger myself harder while she continue to eat me out.

My mind is already lose and the pleasure was already filled in my head, my waist even moves to the rhythm as I continue to finger myself.

"Lis"

"Oh Lisaaaa!" I kept moaning her name, as all the pleasure that came from my breast, to my clit and even in my walls combined into such desire that I can't even imagine.

"Oh my goodness!!", I loudly moaned while tightening the grip on her hair and pushes her harder into my pussy.

"Lis, please!! Be rough on me!!!" I can't help but to shout when I'm done of her treating me softly. I know she's not that kind of a person, especially with something like this. She's rough and dominant.

My request was immediately filled when she pulled my hand away and exchanged it with her. Her three fingers inserted into my walls as it penetrated me roughly, moving in and out, thrusting so fast while she continued to eat me more and more.

Her mouth suck my clit, played with it that the pleasure combines which made me loses my sanity as I kept moaning and shook for Lisa.

The sound of my wetness was the loudly heard together with my moans and groans of pleasure as she continues to do what she wanted.

I couldn't even feel the coldness of the place, but only tha pleasure and the heat that our body produces while my sweats mixes together with my soaking center.

"Lis!!! OH hard- harder baby!!"

She was not needed to be told twice when she did what I wanted, her fingers moves upward that it touched the sensitivies part of my body, it thrusted so fast and with the stimulation that she's giving with my clit by the used of her mouth she's already making me so close to my orgasmic bliss.

"Oh babyyy!!!

"That's it!! OH! Ruin me!!

"Be rough on me!!

"Don't s- stop!! OH Goodness!!"

"I'm cumming!!"

"I'm cu-cumming so haaaard!!

"Lisaaaaaaa!!!!", I shouted as orgasm took my body, wetness came out in me and Lisa continues to eat me out while my body shook and my mind went blank and the pleasure have taken my consciousness.

My voice squeak as I continue to shout for more, for her to not stop and just let me enjoy such feeling of so much pleasure. I couldn't even care that we are out, that people could come in here and witness me enjoying my orgasm that Lisa gave me. I was out. Blank about the world to give care on what they will think of me.

"Shit! Baby!! I'm so hard!!" I opened my eyes weakly while I was still catching my breath and I saw Lisa hastily undressing herself before she carried me to one of their seats and she sited while I'm straddling on her lap. My legs was spread open, and her hard shaft was already poking near my entrance.

I'm weakly holding her nape, still in shock to what she did to me

earlier. My breath was so loud as I slowly tried to open my eyes, already weak and tired, but I couldn't deny that my body wanted more. I wanted to feel Lisa's dick, thrusting inside me whatever she wanted.

"Fuck me Lisa!", I mumbled before I move my head and kiss her hungrily. Her mouth already accepted my tongue as we continued to kiss in so much desire and lust.

Both our moans and groans are getting louder, and the sound of us kissing was heard with this silent night.

"I'm going t-to put it in!!", and just before I process what she mean I felt her cock entering, it was so big that pain still lingers in my pussy but the wetness provided lubrication for us as I move my waist, pushing it further.

"Fuck!!" I heard Lisa cursed while she hug me tightly, her face was buried in my neck while she move her hips and pounded into me. My mouth was widely opened while my eyes are tightly closed, lost by this sinful sensation.

Lisa was so big that it felt like a pole was inserted inside me while we continued to move, syncing it together to achieve the same pleasure we both wanted.

"Lisa! Har- harder baby." I whispered into her ear that made her groaned and her hand went to my butt and guided me while she moved harder. That I felt her dick thrusting inside my walls, towards my cervix that it cause me to lose my mind and weakly hold her hair for support.

"Sooo goood!! OH oh oh, oh, Lisaa!!"

"Faster!! Faster, baby!!!"

I felt like I was jack hammered on how fast and deep she could get. Both our sweats is making it harder for me to hold her that I ended up tussled and shook around while she continued to fuck me roughly.

"Ah!! Ahh, ahhh soooo goooood!!

"Soo fuckkinggg goooood!!

When I cursed Lisa looked at me, and immediately kissed me hungrily, my moans was shared into her mouths while we continue to fuck each other. Her hips never stopped moving, her hands that were groping my waist became tighter, and her groans were getting louder and louder.

"I'm close" she breathlessly said before she move her head and suck my breast, and my body moved closer towards her that my clit rubs against her abdomen, that it cause such pleasure that was penetrating my feminity.

"Me too. Me- t- too, baby. Let's c-cum to-together," I managed to say before I arched my back and let her suck my breast while I moves harder for the both of us.

"OHHH!! OHHH LISAAA!!

"BABYYY!!

"FUCK! JENNIE KE-KEEEP MOA-NING LIKE THAT!!", she loudly moaned and adjusted her dick that it went to the upper side of my walls that caused me to roll my eyes and grips her shoulder tightly.

I really needed to ask her what it was because it feels so good everytime.

"FUCK!! YES LISA!! THAT'S IT!!

"OHHHH!!! YESSS!!

"AHH!! AHH AHH AHH AHH AHHIMMM CUMMMIIIINGGGG!!!!"

"I"M CUMMMI-CUMMING SOO HA-HARRD!!

"FUCK!! FUCK!! FUCK!!", I heard Lisa cursed endlessly before she sucked my tongue to stifle my moans as I shudders above her. My orgasm hit me so hard that I felt so weak to even think and just be lost by this beautiful sensation while Lisa was groaning and thrusting, prolonging my orgasm until I felt her breath hitch.

"JENNIEEEEE!!"It was the first time she called my name when she's about to cum and despite the situation we are having my heart still always flutter for her. Already in bliss just having her by arm as her warm seeds planted inside me, both our cums mixes together and we continue to catch our breath while I'm holding Lisa in my arms, her head buried on my chest.

I weakly kiss her head and force her to look at me. My chest hammers from our activity and from the feelings I have for Lisa. It was pounding so loudly while my hands shook to hold her tightly. Our gaze locked together while I tried to wipe her sweats away until she held my hands, stopping me from what I'm doing.

"Lisa," I softly said her name, my heart didn't even calm down a bit.

"Jennie," my eyes tightly closed when I heard her say mine. I felt like my ear loses function when I opened my eyes and saw her dark, beautiful orbs that was already staring at me.

"I love you," we both said.

# Chapter 27

Jennie's POV

I woke up feeling sore in my centre. My body hurts all over as I thought about what happened last night. After what happened in the pool, Lisa carried me up in her room, and we didn't stop till then. I ended up begging her to let me rest and sleep a bit, and after she took me again with different positions that I was not aware of, I didn't know when she stop last night because I ended up passing out when she's doing me from behind.

"Baby," I called her, and my head was rested sideways against her chest. Her heart was softly beating together with mine.

I tried calling her again and even tried to slap her face gently because my stomach had been rumbling since I woke up. I'm so hungry, and I wanted to eat together with her, but I guess she is going to sleep more.

Her little snore was heard, and her lips partly open. She's so calm and innocent to stare right now, and I even feel how my heart flutters when I remember how we confessed our love for each other.

I was not expecting it, but it was the happiest moment of my life. I felt contented, and it felt like I'm floating in a soft cloud whenever I thought about it.

She loves me

Lisa loves me.

-

I wore Lisa's clothes that I found in her walk-in closet, her large red shirt, and I found her boxers. Even limping, I tried to give her a kiss before I went down to their kitchen and maybe find something to

eat so we could eat breakfast when she woke up.

"Jennie," I gasped loudly when I heard my name called, and the pounding of my chest doubles when I turned around, and I found that it was Lisa's grandmother.

I gulped hard while I tried to hide my shaking hand in my back, frightened because of her presence.

How could I forget that this is Lisa's grandparents' house?

"Go-good mo-morning ma'am," I stuttered while I tried to look straight at her, but her gaze was so intense and intimidating that I ended up bowing down instead.

I heard her humm as an answer before she walked closer to me. Her presence alone was so expensive that it made me step back and scared of her more.

"What are you doing in my kitchen?" She asked. It was not even forced out, and it came out even softly, but it still didn't even calm me.

I slowly looked up and smiled slightly at her. My hands were still shaking while I gestured the ingredients I prepared on the counter.

"I'm ahh- cooking breakfast ma'am. For Lisa, "I gulped hard when I delivered my sentence.

She went to the ingredients I prepared and looked into it. Then she smiled slightly at me, somehow that calm me down a bit.

"Pancakes?," she asked, and I nodded while I hastily arranged everything until I felt her hand hold mine, stopping me.

"I'm sorry about last night," I froze about what I heard. I couldn't move, and Lisa's grandma was the one who went to me and made me look at her while she held both my hands.

Her soft smile helped me not to be much nervous like last night, and the apology she said was at least made me hope that this would turn out well.

"I assumed you've known about her past?" She asked , and I nodded, and her sighed broke out. The worriedness she had for Lisa made me understand her. She's her only granddaughter, and with all Lisa's unfortunate past and the life I have right now, it is really not helping the situation.

"Lisa, my granddaughter. She has suffered enough Jennie. She used to be so innocent, full of love and hope not until the accident happened, " she cried and wiped her eyes before she smiled and continued.

"Did you know that Lisa doesn't have a very good relationship with her father?" This time, I urged her to go on and focus on what she will tell me. Because I wanted to know more about Lisa, whether it was good or bad, no matter what. I want her, I wanted her for everything she is.

"Her mother got a text with a photo of Lisa's dad and her mistress. Then, three of them were in the car, and Lisa's wife was the one driving. It was so late at night, but still, Lucia, Lisa's mother, still wanted to go. But then a truck driver fell asleep and didn't know that he was on the wrong lane and that's how the accident happened. The reason why Lisa was accused of murder because she was the one who operated the truck driver, and it was so unfair since Lisa don't know about the accident, she was in duty and just accepting patients who needed her help and the driver was already in a critical condition and the company and his family tried to sue her for what she did, they said she did it intentionally"

I gasped loudly when I learned about the truth. My heart clenched for Lisa's pain. It was just too much, she was the one who lost everything and yet people could be so cruel and unfair towards her.

While she's telling me what happened her tears fell nonstop, this is the first time Mrs Manoban cried since she's known to be a strong and intimidating in Busan but how could I blame her, even when she just told me what I happened I ended up crying myself because of what Lisa experienced, everyone she loved died and she was not even there for them.

She was left with no choice but to accept the reality. That they are

gone. Lisa's family was gone.

I can't take it. How could Lisa take all the pain and live like this? It's too much. She's a beautiful person inside and out, and yet the world was so cruel to her.

"Jennie," I looked up at Mrs Manoban when called my name. She even tried to wipe her tears before she smiled and held my face.

"I- my Lisa, she's not a good person. After the incident, she tried taking drugs, getting drunk, and even getting arrested. It was her way to cope up with the pain, and I was there to understand her, and now that you're here. I hope you will do the same. Please be there for her, fight for Lisa. She has suffered enough, and the way I see it, she's happy now, so much happy when she's with you" I broke down when she told me everything that I ended up hugging her tightly and cried in her arms. It hurts so much to know what happened, Lisa experienced this all, all the pain and heartbreaks.

"I will, I will ma'am. I'm going to fight for Lisa, I will be there for her. Always, I promise that," I mumbled against my breath, which made us laugh in relief that we were okay now.

"Now, let's continue making breakfast. And I gotta tell, Lisa loves kimchi fried rice, and you should cook it for her as well," I nodded my head at her, smiling widely because we only got a little more problem to be genuinely happy and that was my dad, but we will get there.

"And Jennie. Call me grandma from now on"

The day went better than I ever thought. It was perfect, and we enjoyed it with so much laughter and love together with Lisa. I couldn't ask for more but just to be like this every day.

---

3rd Person's POV (7 months ago)

The sound of ECG echoed the whole place. A woman and a man in their late 40s were standing in front of their daughter's bed, who just got up from the coma from the accident she had 3 years ago.

Both their heads are bowing down while their daughter cried and let out her frustrations.

"Lisa, Lisa must have hurt so much," she whimpered, crying. Her chest tightened so much when she thought of her wife.

"We did it for you. You know how we don't like her from the start. And all this accident happened because of her family," her dad tried to explain himself, but no matter how she thought about it. It just so wrong. She and Lisa are already married and even already have a daughter. What could she feel growing up without her parent by her side.

"How about Chealse? Where is she?", and this time, both her parents cried as the mention of their granddaughter. They felt in pain as they remembered how she was suffering right now.

"She recovered from the accident 3 years ago, but she. She's not alright. She's diagnosed with Anaemia, and we-- we don't know what to do,"

The woman was not able to process what she meant. It was all too much to take. She just recovered from coma for almost 3 years, then she just knew that both her parents had saved them from the accident since she was able to call them before she passed out.

But she was not expecting that they would do all of this. That they would fake their death and lie to her wife. She knew that they didn't have a good relationship with both their families, but she was not expecting to get to this.

Lisa, she loved her so much that she fought with everything for them to work.

But now, Lisa thought that they were dead and she just got her consciousness for almost 3 years and discovered that her daughter is sick, and her wife thought that they were gone.

She couldn't think straight. It was like the world was playing with them, and her parents were the reason that all of this happened.

But one this she's sure is that she needed to see her wife, they are

married after all. They were happy, and she's sure Lisa would understand once she'll knew about what happened.

"I'll be going to Lisa and tell her the truth about everything, and I expect you to apologize to her as well. You are both too much, I can't really believe you've done all of this"

"But if -

"Stop it, mom. My daughter is sick, and it hurt so much by just thinking about it. What more else with Lisa? She thought she had lost us, but here we are, hiding away from her. "

--

"No baby, don't run too much," she told her daughter when she caught her and wiped her sweats away.

Chealse pouted and just hugged her mom, hoping it could woo her and just let her be. But she can't, even if her mom wanted to.

"We've been through this baby. We know you can't." Her mom cried, unable to take that in such a young age that her daughter can be this sick.

"Mrs. Manoban," they were interrupted by the nurse who helped them for Chealse and hers lab result.

They were guided inside the doctors office, where they both settled. Then the doctor came with a gloomy expression, and right there, she knew that she was not compatible with her daughter to be the donor.

"We tried everything to provide possibility, but there's just no chance, Mrs. Manoban, however, we can still have another method and have Chealse's other parent, and just like you. We can have another test to see if she can be a match for your daughter. "

She was devastated. it's been a month since she was fully recovered, and it's also been a month since she was looking for Lisa, but no matter how she tried, it was like her presence was gone, it was like no one knew her in Seoul.

While they were walking outside the hospital building. Someone saw them, actually she was really looking for them because she knew and she believed she was still alive after she saw Chealse back in the park.

Now she felt relieved, even though she was confused about what was happening.

"Chaeng!!" Jisoo shouted as she ran towards them and hugged her best friend tightly.

She missed her, she missed her so much and now she felt like God has given her chances to be with her best friend again.

The latter was shocked, but nevertheless, she hugged Jisoo back and cried in her arms. Finally, someone knew her, and she's sure Jisoo knew where Lisa was.

And she promised herself to make their family complete again. Now that she's back, no one can ever make them be separated again.

Lisa was hers after all.

Chaeng is Lisa's wife.

"Where's Lisa chu? I have been looking for her"

---

# Chapter 28

Jennie's POV

I was holding Lisa's hand while she drove us on the way to my house. I spent the entire day with her and her grandparents, and I can say it went well, and now we want to try to pursue my parents. To accept and support us, especially my dad.

"Everything will be alright," she tried to make me calm , and I smiled and kissed her hand, appreciating her effort.

Lisa took my hand as well and kissed it while she drove, then taking it off before she hugged me by my shoulder. I leaned my head and kissed her cheeks before I loudly sighed and just hoped for everything to be better.

She parked outside the gate and even opened a door for me. Gesturing her hand for me to hold before I gently hop off her car.

"You're so sweet lately," I tried to tease her, but she only winked at me and held my waist securely. The guard immediately opened the gate for us, and the pounding doubled against my chest before I slowly twisted the knob.

I found my dad angrily glaring at us while my mom was looking so worried while she's trying to call someone on her phone.

"Mom," I ran towards my mother, and just before I could come closer towards her, my dad quickly went to Lisa and punched her face.

Her groaned was heard that I run back towards her and held her face worriedly. I was really expecting this to happen, but there's also a little hope inside me that my dad would accept us.

"Dad!!"I covered my body to protect Lisa when she's about to hit her

again. My tears already fell, disappointed to my own father

Thankfully, my mom went to him, stopping him from coming towards us before he pointed his finger angrily and shouted his frustrations.

"I'm sorry."

The room went silent when we heard Lisa apologize. She was kneeling not too far from my father while her head was bowing down. Her fist was clenched, and drops of sweat came from her skin as she tried to say sorry to both my parents.

"What?" My father uttered in shock as he walked closer to Lisa, and as an impulse, I went closer to her as well and hugged her gently, hoping my dad won't hurt her again.

Lisa sighed and held my hand. She smiled slightly at me before she looked up my father.

"I apologized for disobeying what you wanted, and I admit that I'm not a good person. However, your daughter made such a great impact in my life, and I wanted to be with her. I love your daughter Taylor, and please, just please support us and let me love her the best I can."

I was speechless when I heard what Lisa said. I was not expecting that from her, and I'm just thinking of telling our relationship to both our parents but this. This was just unexpected.

"Lisa," I mumbled her name before I hugged her tightly. I cried in her arms, grateful and loved but her words and how she could fight together with me against my father. On how she could throw away her pride so that my dad could accept us.

Her smile made mine go bigger, and her tears that were about to fall glistened her eyes while she hugged me back.

I saw how my mom went to my dad. She was carresing my dads arm while whispering words to just let us be and to at least make me happy as their only daughter.

"Do-do you really love her?" My dad asked, which made Lisa and I look at him. Our heads nodded eagerly before we pleaded again for him to accept us.

I watched how my dad sighed and wiped his tears away. How he held my mother's hand before he interwined it and nodded his head at us.

At that moment, my heart beat in such a beautiful way when he uttered the words I had hoped to hear.

"Fine. Just please don't break her apart. She's my princess Manoban. "

I ran towards my dad and hugged him tightly. The feelings of gratitude I gave for him melted my heart as I cried happily in his arm. I am thankful that finally, he accepted the relationship I have for Lisa.

"Thank you! Thank you so much, dad, mom, "I told them while I was in their middle, embracing them both into such warm hugged.

"Come here Lisa", my mother called my girlfriend and even gestured to join our hugging session, but my she just smiled and bowed at them.

I pouted and tried to pursue her to join us, but she seemed persistent, which made me pout and frown at her.

"Don't do that, baby, or else I'm going to kiss you right now," I quickly purse my lips when I hear that from her. My mom laughed, but my dad cleared his throat, indicating that he didn't like what my girlfriend said.

"Stay over the night, Lisa, it's late. You can have the guest room," I was about to protest when my dad said it because Lisa could stay in my room. My bed is much bigger and coozier, but she already held my hand, stopping me from voicing out.

"Of course, Taylor. Thank you," both my mom and dad nodded before they said their good night, but not before he pulled Lisa with him, making it sure that she would really stay in the guest room.

I pouted and waved at Lisa when she looked at me, shee seems okay with the setup, maybe wanting to make a good impression for both my parents because we just got alright.

--

I was getting ready to sleep when I heard a faint knock on my door, and I knew by then on who exactly it was.

"Your face is swollen," I worriedly said to her while I guided her inside my room, letting her seat on my bed before I took my first aid kit from my bathroom and an ice in my small fridge.

"I'm alright," she told me and stopped my hand from taking care of her, and I shook my head again and pouted when I saw how it got worse.

"I'm really sorry what my dad did, and I'm sorry for slapping you. I know I haven't really apologized to what I did,"

Lisa smiled and held my hand, kissing the back of it before she scooped me from my bad that I ended up straddling her while my arms wrapped around her nape.

"I love you," Literally, my heart skipped a beat to what she just said. I was not expecting that she would say it again, but nevertheless, it made me happy, so happy, especially when I'm with her.

I carress Lisa's face and kissed her cheeks that were swollen before I gently applied ointment and ice around it.

But I saw how she pouted her lips, and even her eyes stared at me like a puppy that wanted something.

"What?," I asked confusedly, but I could only squell silently when she held my face and kissed me passionately. Her lips invaded mine, wanting to open my mouth and successfully take my tongue and suck it.

"Lisssm,"I moaned inside her mouth while I unconsciously scraped her nape and tried to kiss her back, but I'm too lost to respond to her kisses and just submessively do what she wanted.

Her hands went to my waist, pushing me closer towards her that I felt her manhood hardened. I became nervous, and I pulled away from her while I caught my breath.

"I- I'm sore, so sore baby. My pussy need rest" I pouted when Lisa grinned, until she laughed loudly and buried her face in my chest.

"What's funny?" I asked her, but she only shook her head and held my face before she kissed my forehead.

"Do you love me?"she asked, and I immediately nodded my head as an answer while my smile broke out because of how cute she was.

"I love you, Lis. I love you so much."

I saw how her eyes glistened, and the look of love and adoration she had for me melted my heart.

"I'm yours, Jennie. No matter what happened, I'll always be there for you and choose you, "

I held her face and kissed her lips. We kissed in such beautiful rhythm, without lust, nor desire. It was such a sweet kiss, so soft and gentle, that I've grown addicted and I can't be able to stop this feeling.

---

Lisa and I walked together with our hands interwined inside the church. It was Sunday today, and we decided to attend the mass. I even heard how the loud gasp and gossip as we walked to our seats. We were sitting in the middle of both my parents and her grandparents.

Today, I won't be doing any lectures or be a

cantor since I will be with my girlfriend this mass. She was not supposed to come with me, but I forced her, but with a condition of to be sited next to me and not in front in where I'm going to do my duty.

"I can't believe that Governor Kim really did let her daughter be

with that criminal,"

"I know and a woman too. Too much for being a public servant while his daughter will rot in hell for being gay. "

I heard the people in the back. The grip of my hand tightened, feeling hurt by how they could judge Lisa when they didn't know the truth and to their sick morals towards gay people.

"Baby," I heard her whispered and kissed my ear, and the loud gasp was heard again, murmurs on how could we do that in front of God.

"What a disgrace," my ear rang when I heard what she said and my brows furrowed in such irritation, that I was about to stand up and confront them, but dad already stood up first.

"Excuse me, ladies, but it's my daughter you're talking about, and if you don't have a nice thing to say, please refrain from speaking. What you see is what you get. My family appreciates a little silence. "

Lisa let out a sound of laughter that I ended up getting embarrassed and tried to cover her mouth when she continues to laugh loudly. Even her grandparents tried to stop her, but she wouldn't budge until I couldn't help her cuteness that I laughed together with her.

" Both of you silence, the mass it about to start," it was mom who told us to stop so we don't have any choice but to do the right thing.

I wrapped my arms around Lisa's hand as we stood up for the arrival of the priest. Even father Mark's eyes went wide when he saw me with the person he told me not to get closed with. But he got no choice, I already love this woman.

My heart felt full as the mass continued, and I knew that Lisa was not even listening and just kept on carresing my legs when she thought my parents were not looking at us.

"Lis!," I whispered in her ear when she suddenly lifted my dress and inserted her hand and touched my thigh.

My body starts to heat up while I bit her shoulder to stifle my loud breaths and sound from coming out.

"It's boring," she whispered in my ear that made me smile and shiver when her warm breath touched my skin.

I looked up, and Irene was almost done with her role as a cantor. She even looked at me teasingly as she delivered her words, Seulgi was present as well. I think ever since they got to know each other, she didn't skip a mass whenever Irene will be the one who will invite her.

"Come on," I pulled Lisa's hand, and we both went to the church restroom, and just before I could lock the door, I was pinned on the wall and Lisa's arms cornered me.

We were looking at each others eyes intently. No one really dared to look away while out breathes was getting louder and louder. My heart pounded with so much excitement and desire. The heat is winning, and lust is igniting until I felt so lost that I didn't know that she was already pinning me.

My hands are clasped above me, and I interwined together with hers while Lisa kissed me hungrily. She was groaning and grunting, and it felt like a wolf finally found its prey on the way she kissed and held me.

"You're not going to stop me now, are you?"

I smiled in between our kisses and grinded myself towards her, which made her grip tighten on my hands before we hump into each other, moving in sync.

"Oh, just fuck me Lisa. Fuck me hard"

# Chapter 29 (M)

Hello!! I hope someone is still reading this. I've been so busy with school that's why it took me so long to update and finally it's done and I can get to rest.

This is the longest chapter I ever wrote. Please do enjoy!! ⚠

3rd Person's POV

Both breathes were getting louder. Jennie was struggling to stifle her moans, and Lisa was grunting to lift her lover towards the sink.

Their sweats are falling, both bodies are getting hot, and lust has fully ignited despite the mass still ongoing.

"Fuck!" Lisa grunted before she kissed Jennie hungrily, she was so hard and turned on by the situation they are having.

And Jennie was not different as well. She was dripping, soaking in such wetness as she continued to grind herself towards Lisa's hard shaft.

"Oh ba-baby," she called her, her arms wrapping around her nape, kissing her with the same intensity.

"You're so bad Jennie", Lisa tried to tease while tilting the brunette neck, sucking and licking it down towards her collarbone in where she left a mark before she lift Jennie's dress.

Even though she wanted to rip it apart, she didn't want to cause chaos for her lover. So, with all the patience she has, she kisses her girlfriend hungrily again before parting her legs, and Jennie is the one who put her underwear on the side.

"P-put it inside me. Ple-please, "she was begging. Her face was all flustered and lustful.

Lisa loses her mind and wraps her hands around Jennies neck, choking her slightly before she puts her fingers into her girlfriend's cunt and teases it's wetness.

"Li-Lis," Jennie was choking. Surprise by what her girlfriend was doing. This was the first time she did this, and her heart was pounding in such excitement and desire. She wasn't scared. Instead, she was begging, her eyes were begging to choke her harder and to finger fuck her while their gaze are locked together.

Lisa, she never disappoints when she inserts her three fingers in Jennie's wet pussy. Loud gasp spread across the room, her eyes watered, her face was flustered, and in Lisa's case, she was never this turned-on with her entire life.

"FUCK! FUCK!", Lisa grunts when she felt Jennie's walls clenched around her fingers, her mind was in bliss while they continue to stare at each other.

In and out

Deep and fast

Lisa thrusted with so much force that Jennie couldn't able to control herself and moved her waist to take Lisa's fingers. Her eyes closed while her mouth opened.

She's about to cum and she's about to lost consciousness as well.

Jennie doesn't know what she would do first.

Is it to cum to or breath

She's so lost on what to choose

With all the pain and pleasure combined, her moans were getting louder, whimpering in satisfaction as her orgasm taking over her body and mind.

"Li-lisa!!!" She called her lover while tapping her hands. Wanting to take it off from her neck that has been making her breathless, literally.

Lisa was not dumb not to oblige and immediately took it off, and moved it to Jennies nape and pushed her towards her closer as they kissed hungrily for the nth time.

Jennie's wetness was making a loud sound. The sound of skin thrusting was getting louder while Lisa continued her conquest.

Both are out of control. They were like a wild beast in heat. It was like fire ignited that they couldn't be able to control and be tamed.

"Lust and adultery are sins driven by the devil inside you. To engage in premarital or extramarital sex, before or outside of marriage, is to sin in God's sight. That is precisely the point of Hebrews 13:4, . "Marriage" and the marriage must go to bed together and are to be kept pure." Father Mark's words could still be able to hear despite their moans. His words were so strong and sacred, but Jennie.

Jennie , who once wanted to be a nun. To serve and worship God, her saviour has already lost her morals and thoughts towards her devotion because of the woman who keeps on thrusting her fingers inside her.

"ughh fas-ter Lis Oh"

"What ever happened do not engage in such act,"

"FUC-K! Jen-nie"

"It is immoral and sinful, and the God above is watching us,"

"ughh oh- Go-god!!"Jennie pants as her eyes roll into such pleasure while the priest continues telling his homily.

"di- did you hear what the father said, Jennie? this is bad, "Lisa teased, but the brunette only locked their eyes together and kissed her seductively, mouth opening, tongue thrusting, and legs widely-open.

"you- you are my f-father Lisa uughhh cumming!! n-now bless m-me fatherr!!!"

---

Jennie's POV

"Where have you two been? You missed half the mass." Mom asked when she saw Lisa and I coming towards her.

We just got out from the restroom, where I was not expecting that something unholy could happen between us while the mass was ongoing.

But I can't help it. Lisa changed me.

Before, I was very conscious of my actions. I'm thinking twice before I'll do something and making sure I won't regret it, but now. I've been so brave, careless, and happy.

If there was no one who knocked on the door asking if there was someone inside, I knew we could be doing something worse than earlier.

I looked at my mom. Anxious to what I will answer her that my heart was beating madly against my chest while I grip my hand on Lisa's shirt.

"Lisa was having a diarrhoea," I uttered, which made both of them look at me.

Mom was stifling her laugh while Lisa was flustered, maybe embarrassed about what I answered to my mother.

But what can I say? Lisa and I were doing something that we were not supposed to do? And worse inside the church?

"What!"Lisa protested, and I was too late to cover her unfiltered mouth.

"We were having sex,"

I literally slap my forehead when she told my mother the truth. Embarrassments filled me while I looked away from my mother, and the beating of my chest is making me lose my trance and just

froze on my spot.

"I- I ahh," I heard mom tried to talk, while Lisa just chuckled and held my waist securely. I don't know why, but I felt my mom's gaze to where Lisa's hand landed.

"Of- of course. Je- my Jennie is not that inn-"

"Mom, I- please. Don't listen to he-"

I was about to lie when my mom raised her hand, stopping me from talking while she fan herself with her other hand. Her eyes were on the verge of crying, but the redness of her cheeks was so clear to unsee.

My mother was blushing.

"It's fine," she looked at me then to Lisa before she took my hand, and I shivered on how cold it felt.

"You're a grown-up now. And I hope. I just hope you continue to serve our God and be responsible," she added while her tears fell.

I felt genuine happiness to what my mother said , and I hugged her tightly, saying my thank yous and apologies.

"Lisa, be responsible as well. I will trust you for my daughter. " When she said that Lisa only smiled and nodded her head before she held my waist again.

"But don't. Please don't tell this to your father. He just accepted both of you, and you don't want him to get angry again."

The three of us laugh when I hear that from my mother. I just can't believe that she'll be supported with me, to the extent that she would come to this after knowing the truth.

---

"I have something for you," I whispered in Lisa's ear while I covered her eyes behind her back

We went back to my house after what happened in the church. My mom was still staying there for a meeting while dad went to the City Hall for his work. So it's just the two of us in this house.

"What is it?"she tries to asked and I smiled widely for this naughty idea I have for the both of us

I guided Lisa just a foot away from my bed. There was a chair I prepared for her to sit. I researched this kind of thing, so I hope it will go well for me and her.

"Give me 5 minutes. And don't open your eyes until I'll tell you. " I sensually whispered in her ear before I gently bit it

I saw how her skin shivered while she tried to open her eyes, but I immediately covered it again with my hand.

"Just do what I say, baby." I don't know how I did it, but I managed to make her obey me when she nodded her head and took my hand and kissed the back of it.

"Okay," she whispered and smiled slightly.

I kissed her cheek before I walked towards my walk-in closet, and my hand started to shake when I took the things I ordered online. I wore the dress and carried the things and arranged it on my bed.

The dress is red, I can say very sexually sexy. My back was exposed while my chest was only covered with a very thin silk, that my nipples could be seen as it hardened.

I'm shaking all the time. My chest was beating loudly while I quietly tried to calm myself and walk on the foot of my bed, sitting on it while Lisa was just infront of me.

My legs are crossed as I tried to arrange my hair seductively. I'm doing some touches to look more seductive for her.

"Open your eyes," My heart skipped a beat when Lisa slowly opened her eyes. I became much more nervous when our eyes met that I unconsciously grip the sheets, trying to fight her stares.

She looked surprised, and I saw how her breath hitch while she continued to stare at me. She's looking so intently that I became conscious and tried to cover myself, but she already stood up and held my jaw, forcing me to look up at her.

"Lisa," I mumbled her name. Somehow, I was thinking twice about this surprise for her.

I saw how she looked around. Amazement was seen on her face while she bit her lips. Her smirk appeared when she saw the toys I ordered for us to use.

"You're kidding," she grinned and looked at me. Holding me with her both hands while her thumb went to my lips, parting it.

"Did you like it?" I asked while I held her hand and kissed it sensually. Already lost by her scent, while I look up at her.

Lisa smiled and gestured me to stand up, and so I did. Her hand immediately went to my waist and carress my back, her face went to my neck and smelled my scent.

I felt how her grip tightened, how her breath hitched, and how she groaned loudly and kissed me in so much desire and hunger.

It was so sudden and aggressive that I couldn't keep up with her kisses, and I just wrapped my arm around her nape and opened my mouth for her.

"You look so hot in this dress. Fuck!! You're making me go crazier for you!!"she mumbled in between our kisses before she carried me, and I encircled my legs around her.

Our hips move in sync, humping both our centre together . I wasn't wearing any underwear, so I felt how wet I was for her.

"Babyyy~" I moaned when she kissed my neck. Her warm breath touched my skin before she put me down, and I saw that I'm at the entrance door of my bathroom .

My legs were so weak that I stumbled a little. Thankfully, Lisa was able to hold me just as I was about to fall down.

We were both catching our breaths while we continued to stare at each other. We were breathless, our faces were all flustered, and our bodies felt so hot.

"Raise your arm," she said seriously, and I obeyed.

I saw how she unbuckles her belt, never did she try to move her gaze away from me. Her sweats dropped from her forehead, and even her clothes were damp.

"What are you doing?" I tried to ask when she tied my hand above me, and now I'm hanging slightly while I confusedly looked at her.

"Punishing you," she answered, which made me more nervous, that I was almost unable to hear what she said

"Lis- Lisa, what did I do, baby?" I'm scared, I admit. She just looks so intimidating while she continues to stare at me. Her eyes were bloodshot. It felt so cold to stare at.

She smirked and moved closer. The back of her hand touched my face, which made me flinch and gasp loudly. It was like I'm getting burned by her touches. Her hands were so warm, but her eyes were so dark and full of lust.

"Do you trust me?" She asked, and I held my breath as I nooded to her question.

"You've been so naughty, that's why you need punishment. I was not expecting such an innocent girl like you could have such erotic belongings. " I gulped hard when I felt my throat getting stuck and dry. Even my arm was slightly hurting because I'm tied up and hanging.

"Now, let's use it for you, baby. When you can't take what I'm doing, just say stop, alright?" I don't know why, but I only nodded my head and agreed to what Lisa wanted.

Maybe deep in myself. I wanted this, too. I wanted how she could do such things with me. To how she would punish me for the things I bought for us.

I saw her walk towards the bed, and she looked closer to the things I prepared. To be honest, I know nothing about it, the linked was just connected when she sent me videos on how to use the vibrator she had for me before.

All the time, I kept my silence. I was just watching her, looking at the things she took, while my heart beat nervously against my chest. I can't even hear my surroundings and just this strong pounding that's making me turned on in some reason.

Finally, she came back. I can't see what she picked, but in her right hand, I saw she's holding a red blindfold.

"Baby," she called, and I immediately tried to stand erect since I could still feel my toes on the floor.

I looked at Lisa while I was catching my breath. I felt breathless the more I stared at her, the more I anticipated what she would be doing to me. She just looks so serious and hot. Her intimidating persona would just make me kneel and beg her to do anything.

"Close your eyes," again, I obeyed. Until I felt her presence getting closer,and how she softly tied the silk around my eyes so I couldn't be able to see.

I'm scared, so scared. However, the excitement still won as I wait to what she will do next.

While I lost my sense of sight, the others became active. I felt how Lisa walked around me and on how her presence alone made goosebumps all over my skin even, without her doing anything.

Until I felt, a cold, tail-like things around my back. I immediately gasped and flinched when it made contact with my skin. How Lisa travelled it down to my body and down to my butt, until I heard my dress being ripped, and on how she groaned when she undressed me in such force.

Now, I'm naked and tied up, completely immobilised, for Lisa.

"Do you want to be punished, Jennie?" I heard her whispered in my ear, and for the nth time, I flinched and shivered for her. My centre

was begging to be touched and held. How my body seeks her warm hand to hold me anywhere.

"Y-yes," I answered while gulped

"Yes, what?"

I tried to move closer to Lisa when I couldn't take her torturing me like this. That my body just wanted her to have her closer.

But my efforts were useless when she moved away.

"Answer me!!!" She shouted, and I loudly gasped when I felt a flogger hit my butt.

"Oh God!!" I shouted when the pain gave comfort instead of just hurting me.

Now I know when I'm searching about this. People were giving their reviews on how being humiliated and get spank could be such a beautiful feeling.

"ANSWER!!"she shouted. She was almost seething. Mad that I'm not answering what she wanted.

"Aww!" I flinched and cried when she whipped me again.

"Yes!! Fatheeer!!" I finally said and grunted because of the pain she inflicted. My mind was getting hazy, but when the pain and pleasure combine, I couldn't believe how amazing it could be felt.

"How much can you take?" She asked, and I felt her warm hand touch my butt. Slowly caressing it before, I felt her kiss and whispered something in my ear.

"You have a very fine ass, Jennie," she complimented, and I don't know how it happened but she made me feel confident rather than to get embarrassed like before.

"20" I answered her question, and I felt her stop just behind me.

"Let's do 10"

"No, let's do 20, Father," I insisted

"Start counting." That's what she said until I heard the sound of the whip, and I shouted when it inflicted me pain again.

"1"

I groaned louder when it hurt much more.

"Ah!!"

"2"

Whip~

It's already starting to get numb.

"3"

Whip~

My pussy starts to feel more sensitive

"4"

It's dripping and soaking

Whip~

"5"

Wanting to be touch while Lisa could continue to spank my ass

Whip~

I'm lose, I surrender. The lust and pain it's so much

"6"

I was getting whipped until it reached 15. I was taking the pain with such eagerness and desire that my wetness was dropping down to my legs. I don't know how it happened, but I'm getting hot. I wanted to be touched and to be fuck hard by my lover. But I also

want to let her know that I can take what I promised.

"More!! More Father hit me moooore!" I'm going crazy.

She's driving me crazy as she continues to groan and hit me. As the number goes up, the harder she hits me, the more it causes me to shout loudly.

Whip~

"Tw-twenty," I breathlessly mumbled as I try to catch my breath. I felt weak and helpless while I was hanging. Only the belt was holding and supporting my body. I felt like I'm about to collapse, but the desire, the lust that my body wanted was making me conscious.

I was about to say something when I felt my mouth getting covered and tied around me.

"It's time to get fuck silently" she whispered and tied the gag. There was a ball that was rested behind my teeth, making it hard for me to breathe and unable to talk.

Even struggling, I still beg her.

"Yeshhh!! Yesshh mmpleash!!"

I heard the rustling of her clothes. She was breathing heavily like I was. But it's kinda hard for me because I could only do it with my nose.

I felt her hold my waist, and the tip of her dick was at my entrance, and I quickly wrapped my legs around her.

"You're so fucking hot Jennie" she whispered before I felt her entered inside me aggressively. Her cock, went to the end of my walls, thrusting so hard that made me lost and weak that I ended up struggling to wrap my legs around her. Not to mention, both our sweats are making it slippery to hold her tightly.

"Ohhmm!! Ohmmm!!" That's the only sound that I could make. I'm losing my mind. The pleasure with the pain combined is like

nicotine that made me high and keeps wanting for more.

"Shit!! Fucking hell!!" She cursed loudly until her hand went to my ass and I felt her grip me there as she continue to fuck me harder.

We were both grunting, moaning our delight, groaning in satisfaction while we fuck into oblivion. I don't really care if anyone could hear us. I don't really care anymore.

Lisa's with me, she's doing this with me. I'm hers, and she's mine as well. That's the only thing that matters.

I shouted for more. It was inaudible, but I knew she understood what I meant when she pulled me together and continued to thrust so deep and fast that I was unable to keep up with my orgasm building.

It was coming to me so hard, it's making me lose all my senses, everything felt blank and just this pain and pleasure that combines its making my world rotates.

"Ahhmmm!! Ahhh!! Ahh! Ahh!! Ohh!! Ohh!"

I could only see pitch black, I could hear her sighs and moans,and I could only feel her shaft entering inside me so dominantly while I'm hanging helpless and tide above the pole of my bathroom doors with my lover's belt tide around my hands. While my saliva drools down on us, making our tangled bodies wetter together with our sweats.

"Ummmiing!!" I was struggling to say that to her, but I knew. I knew she understood when she suck my nipple and she thrusted so much faster that I almost hung helplessly if it weren't on how she held me securely.

My orgasm was building, taking my system into such overwhelming feelings of desire that I have experienced. This is too much, yet this makes me feel complete. This was not in my mind before, and now, it is taking over me. It's marking something inside that I would always want to seek such feelings with Lisa.

"OHHHHHH!!!! MMFFUUCKKKKKK!!!!!!" This was the first time I

cursed when I reached my orgasm. It feels so good to let out and shout how amazing it feels. My mind was lost, and my senses were not working anymore. Just this desire of satisfaction as Lisa continue to ripped me apart and fuck me to our own heaven.

"Shit!! Shit!! Take it, Jen!! Take my cum baby!!" She grunted and I felt how she took the gag away, and suck my breathes. How she held the back of my head securely and moaned her delight inside my mouth as her cum went directly inside me. It shoots to my walls, it spread and sprayed to my cervix that I felt its warmness. The satisfaction was overwhelming. The orgasm we both shared made us weak as we held both our bodies together.

Lisa's hand went above mine and unbuckles her belt, and I immediately clung on her body for support as we caught our breath. I'm shaking, I can't even think straight and just hold her tightly while she does the same with me, too. She's making sure that I won't fall and get hurt.

My heart melted by what she was doing, and I just smiled widely when our eyes met after she took my blindfold away. It was a little blurry, but still, her serious face made her more handsome, and how the sweats covered her entire body made my girlfriend hotter.

"I love you," she said to me and kissed my forehead while she gently carried and took me into my bed.

Lisa was hovering above me. Her arms supported her figure to not crush me while she held my face gently. Her eyes shimmered while she said those words to me

"I love you too, I love you so much" I answered and peck her lips and immediately gives up and passed out.

---

Chaeng's POV

"Chelsea baby. We are finally going to see your dada. I'm sure when she sees us, she will jump in delight and hug as both" I mumbled to my daughter while I carress her head as she sleeps peacefully. We

are on our way to Busan and even Jisoo insisted on coming and hired a driver for us.

She was on our side while looking at us fondly. I knew she's happy that we came back. After I explained everything she was so mad with my parents but I told her that we need to fix everything first and let my parents pay for what they did after everything is settled

"Lisa will be so surprised when they see both of you. I saw how she suffers when she thought you're gone Chaeng"

Smiled by what she said and just kept my silence. I'm just so excited to see her again. All the years the we were apart hurts so much and now. I'm filling everything.

Wait for us Lisa. We will have our family complete again.

---

# Chapter 30

Jennie's POV

I was woken up because of the sting that inflicted me. I felt sore in my centre, and my body ached all over.

"Good evening, baby," I heard Lisa say and kissed my head before she continued treating my wrist. Red marks were seen around it, and it hurts. I gotta admit that, but the reason why I have it is very special to both of us.

I just kept on looking at her while she continued to treat my bruises and marks. She just looks so handsome when she is so serious.

"Why don't you try and be a doctor again?" I asked softly, hoping that I wouldn't offend her with my question because, as I recalled, she didn't really want to talk about her profession, and I partly know why and how.

Fortunately, she just smiled and wrapped a bandage on my wrist before she instructed me to turn around. I quickly obliged and exposed my buttocks to be treated by my doctor.

"Aww!" I hissed when it stings. It really hurts a lot that I tried bitting the pillow to stifle my sound of agony.

"You know , you can just agree to take 10"

I giggled when she suddenly talked about what had happened earlier. I know she's concerned because of the number I chose, but what can I say? I'm already lost at that time.

"I have my doctor treating me, so it's fine." I just said and tried looking at her on my side because I'm still lying in my stomach, and she's behind me.

Lisa laughed and playfully tickled my side before she continued to

treat my wounds again.

"I'm afraid I won't be there when you need my treatment,"

What she said made me get up and look at her. My heart was pounding nervously by what she meant.

"Why?" I managed to ask and held my breath to hear her answer.

I mean, she's not leaving me, right? She promised me that she won't.

She smiled and moved closer while she held my face. Her seriousness was not helping my situation as I panicked about what she would say.

"I'm going back to work. I'm trying to save money to give you a better future. "

"Huh?" I asked confusedly.

Lisa smiled and fixed my hair properly. Tucking it behind me ear before she continues.

"After this summer, I know that you're going to college and take the course you wanted. And I want to take you and come with me in the US, they have lots of opportunities for you. I wanted to work there, but I don't want to be apart from you, so if you want. Do you want to come and live with me?"

What she said made me stunned. I literally froze and look at her with such confusement. I don't really know what to say.

Lisa wanted to live with me, together with her. Both of us are going to live in the same house.

"Look, I'm sorry. I know this is very much to take, but you can decline. Seriously, Jennie, don't be scared. It's just that living abroad is much more peaceful than here, and I also thought that I would be missing you so much if we would be ap-" I quickly lean in for a kiss when she panic. I even felt that she was shocked at first, but after a moment, we held each others faces gently, and we kissed

passionately.

I pulled away after a moment and caught my breath. My eyes are closed while I continue to carress her face.

Butterflies are getting wild inside my stomach as I continue to hold her.

My heartbeat is so loud that it looks like I can't be able to utter a word. My mind feels like floating in such happiness with all the words she just said.

"Say something," I heard her say and peck my lips before we looked into each others eyes.

Oh God

I love this woman so much.

"I'm going with you. Anywhere you are, I'm going with you, baby. " After I said that, I squell when Lisa kissed me again, and we both ended up lying on the bed as we kissed with such sweetness. It felt so soft and addictive while she held my body possessively.

Lisa pulled away first, and my hand went to her nape, and I caressed it slowly. Our smile never left. We felt so full and contented while we continued to hold and look at each other.

"Let's build our future together,"

My happiness was overwhelming. It's too much to take that I ended up giggling and kissing her again and again while I nodded my head. We smile in between our kisses, unable to get off in each others hold.

"Together." I said, and my girlfriend took me again. And this time, it was soft. We made love with such gentleness. No one was eager. We just held each other happily and intently.

---

3rd Person's POV

Jennie's dad went inside the company of his best friend. It was the same person who helped him win most of his elections. The person behind the scheme of why he's always the one who took charge of Busan.

"Good to see you again." Taylor greeted his friend, and they both shook their hands. He seems nervous and fidgeting because whenever Lawrence asks him that they'll meet in his office in Seoul, her knew that this won't go well.

Lawrence gestured for him to have a seat. While his secretary prepared a bourbon for them to share. He looks serious and very calm. However, despite his appearance, Taylor just knew what this was all about.

"So I heard about your daughter," Lawrence said and crossed his legs. The glass is in his hand while playing with the ice inside it as he looks at Jennie's father.

The latter is restless. He seems troubled that he can't be able to look at his friend. But still, he needed to say something.

"Y-yes, she's, you know. In a relationship with Mr and Mrs Manoban's granddaughter. They are dating." That what he says, hoping that Lisa's background could be a help in this situation he's having.

However, Lawrence only smiles and seats properly. He put the glass on the table and looked at Taylor seriously.

"I thought we had an agreement. That was when Jennie decided to change her mind in being a nun. She would marry my son."

Taylor's eyebrow raised. He knew this was the reason why he wanted to meet him despite the distance, and he knew that he couldn't really disagree with what his friend wanted. The debt of his gratitude was just so much to decline his wishes.

So he took the bottle and poured over his friends glass, and they both shared glances.

"Of course. I remembered it clearly. However, my daughters

girlfriend was the reason Jennie didn't continue to be a nun. I also tried to go against their relationship. But I can't really let my daughter hate me, right?" Taylor stopped as he looked at his friend who was already gripping his glass.

"You're a father as well, Lawrence. I knew you understood. " he added in full of hope.

But what shocked him was that his friend suddenly laughed loudly and tapped his shoulder. Smiling from ear to ear before he whispered something that made him shake and his body felt cold.

"You know how my son wanted your daughter. How he's so obsessed with her, and that's the reason why I'm helping you. So don't go telling bullshits of how you wanted a good father for Jennie because in the first place. You're just using her from the start, the agreement, remember?"

Both Jennie's parents' business bankrupt, and because of this, they asked for help from Lawrence. The latter helped them in exchange for Jennie's future with his son, who was obsessed with Jennie, to the point that in grade school, he stabbed someone with a pencil just because he was talking to his little crush.

It was also the reason Jennie was not involved with any man aside from him because every time they talked to her. There's something bad that will happen to them. However, when Lawrence knew that Jennie wanted to be a nun, he protested at first for his son's sake, but his illegal warehouse that was protected in Taylor's administration as a governor was at risk and decided to let it be, since having a daughter like Jennie could improve influence so Taylor will stay in his position and that means his warehouses will be safe.

This cause him the reason for sending his son to Europe to get treated and be away from Jennie, but now. Everything changed, Jennie doesn't want to be a nun anymore, and she's with someone else who was not Lawrence's son.

"But, as I said. I don't want my daughter to be mad at me. " Taylor protested again, but his friend only grinned and tapped his

shoulder.

"That's not going to be a problem. How about this, I will find a way to make Jennie's girlfriend hate her. Right? Isn't it easy?"

Taylor's heart is hammering. He just can't believe that his friend could do such things like this, and also, he witnessed how her daughter is very much in love with Lisa. He can't just let her daughter's heart get broken, can he?

"Taylor. You know how feelings work. Especially with women, and it happens that your daughter is in love and we need that love to hate the person she's in love with. Then they broke apart, and that will my son would come and take her"

---

Chaeng's POV

We arrived at exactly 8 in the morning. It was supposed to be last night, but the rain was just too strong, so we needed to stay in a hotel and wait till morning.

And now we are here. I'm just a little step away with my wife. I'm so excited that my heart just keeps pounding frantically. I can't think straight, and I just wanted to hug her and kiss her and tell her how much I've missed her.

"Finally, baby, we are going to see your dada again," I told my daughter, while I couldn't help but cry while I carried her my arms.

She seems confused, maybe because this was the first time she would see Lisa after the years passed, and when the accident happened, she was just two years old and yet I could still vividly remembers how they bonded together before.

"Let's get inside," I smiled at Jisoo while she guided us. I've already been here before, when Lisa and I met her grandparents, and how we came and visited them frequently.

I followed Jisoo behind her back while I looked around the place. So much had changed, but grandma's love in vintage decorations is

still here.

"Jisoo, why didn't you tell us you were coming?" I stopped and looked at grandma. My smile never left as I looked at her. She didn't even change a bit. It's like she ages like fine wine.

"Good morning, grandma. Is Lisa here?" I heard while Jisoo leaned forward, and they kissed each others cheeks as a greeting.

"She's out. She didn't come home last night, maybe because of the rain. Why? Are there any problems?" My heart melted when I saw how she cared for her granddaughter.

However, what do I expect? Lisa is such a sweet and beautiful person, and anyone who she would meet will love her for who she is.

"No, nothing like that. But I do have good news and a surprise for her. And yeah, you would also be surprise"

Grandma looks so confused. However, her smile never fades, and that's the time I slowly walk towards them, and I saw how her eyes went wide.

She looked at me then at my daughter. She was frozen and lost in her trance, and if I didn't walk closer enough to her, I wouldn't see how her eyes glistened.

"Good Lord. Rośe, is that really you?" She asked, and I nodded my head as an answer. Then her gaze went to Chealse, her eyes were asking if she was Lisa and I's daughter. I nodded again, and her tears quickly fell. Grandma cried, and she carried her great granddaughter on her arms.

I'm crying as well, and I even saw Jisoo trying to wipe her tears away as she continued to look at us.

I was about to ask where Lisa could have been, but I stopped when I heard her voice not so far away from us.

"Grandma, I'm home. I saw Jisoo's car outside. I hope she won't give me any -"

When she stopped talking, I looked behind me, and I smiled at her. My heart was pounding so loud, so fast that it felt like it was bursting against my chest.

Finally, after years of being apart, I'm able to see my wife again.

"Babe," I mumbled while my tears kept falling endlessly. While I saw her, confusedly looking at us, to Jisoo and to me, to Grandma, and to our daughter

"I don't know what happened dear, but your family. Chaeng and Chealse are here. " It was grandma who told that to her, and before I could look at Lisa again.

I felt her warm hands wrapped around me. That I immediately closed my eyes and cried in my wife's arms while I hugged her tightly as I could.

"I missed you so much," she whispered

.

# Chapter 31

Chaeng's POV

We are settled on the couch in their living room. Lisa was sitting by my side, listening to my explanation. She was very silent, but I could feel how she's just stopping herself from bursting out. I know her. She won't let her daughter see her getting mad. Especially now that Chealse is quite distant with her, and I saw in her eyes how it pained her.

"Lisa, I'm really sorry about my parents did. If I wasn't in a coma at that time. I wouldn't let all of these happen, " I told her softly and held her hand, and I immediately smiled when she interwined it with hers.

I heard her sighed before she pulled her hand away and went to our daughter, who was just looking at everyone confusedly. She's a very quiet child, maybe because of the trauma from the incident before and being diagnosed with cancer at such a young age.

My daughter suffered so much, and Lisa suffered too. Our family is broken apart because of what happened.

"H-how about my mother? I know, and I understand that your parents are against my family, but they wouldn't leave her just like nothing, right?" She asked, but her back was facing me, while she tried to play with Chealse, crunching down so their height could level.

I looked around them, and I signalled that we needed privacy to talk as a family. Fortunately, they understood and smiled at us, leaving me and Lisa with our daughter

I smiled when Chealse started to smile softly around Lisa and hold face. I walked closer towards them and kneeled behind my wife, hugging her from the back and resting my chin on her shoulders.

She was stiff, maybe surprised by what I did, but eventually, she softened and even carress my hands, which rested on her stomach.

"They said that when they arrived, mom was hugging Chealse securely. Maybe that was the reason our daughter survived. Babe, your mom saved our daughter."

After I told her that, she went silent. Her breathing was getting louder until I felt her hold her breath and wipe her tears from her face.

She was crying.

I understood why she would react like this. Lisa loved her mother very much. She was always there for Lisa, supporting her with her passion and everything she would do.

My heart ached for her. For all the years have gone by she thought that we are all gone. That her mother, me, and our daughter left her in just a day, and I blame my parents for what happened, but what can we do. Everything was done.

"Dada, don't cry." I felt Lisa froze when our daughter said that to her. Her head went up, and she straightly looked at Chealse, who was wipping Lisa's face.

"Can I call you that? Because mommy said that you're my dada and when you're sad I should make you smile and stop from crying, " Chealse added, which made Lisa cry harder in front of our daughter.

She's shaking. Her tears are falling nonstop while she holds our daughters hands on her face while I keep hugging her from the back, wanting to comfort her.

"Che- Chealse. God! I -thank you for saving my family, " Lisa utters and hugged us both. Our daughter was in the middle of us, while Lisa was tapping my back, and the three of us cried in unison.

It was such a happy thing for us. We finally reunited. We are finally complete again, and I won't ever let anything ruin my family again.

---

"Open your mouth, my princess. Here comes the chu-chu. " Lisa baby talked while she fed our daughter . She looked so happy on what she was doing, which made my heart melted, and I almost cried at the sight, but stopped when I saw Jisoo unnie frowning.

"What's with you?" Lisa asked playfully because we knew why she was frowning like that.

"Nothing," she mumbled and continued to eat her food while the two elderly couple laugh at us while we continue to eat our breakfast.

"You should eat too babe", I told Lisa and tried to gesture my spoon with food in it for her to take, but she only smiled and declined my offer.

The dining room went silent after that. I don't know why, but the atmosphere suddenly went awkward while they continued to eat.

"I must say. This is really unexpected Rośe" it was grandpa who talked, making the room alive again, when they all agreed to what he said.

I smiled and held Lisa's hand on the table. My heart throb when she flinched and tried to avoid my eyes, and slowly taking it while she continued to feed Chealse.

My heart throb painfully again. It feels like she's avoiding me. That she doesn't want to be touched and be held just like before.

Even though I felt a tightened of my chest, I still smiled at Grandpa and tried to answer him.

"I know, and it must be really hard to all of you. Especially with my wife. " I looked at Lisa again, who keeps on playing and feeding our daughter. She's really taking care of her so well.

After all those years, her appearance changed. She looked stressed, and the tattoos on her arm were new to me. She didn't have it before, and now her left arms were full of it. It's not really good,

especially since we have Chealse, I normally don't have nice impressions with someone who has tattoos.

I wonder if she has another tattoo on her body. Or I might tell her to cover everything for our daughters sake.

"Babe, when did you have that?" I can't really stop myself from asking and holding her arm. She flinched again, and I don't know if it was just me, but she's so tense when I touched her.

"Lisa, have it a year when we thought the two of you were gone. She said the pain made her forget the emotional pain she felt until she had tattooed all over her left arm. But I think that's just all right, Lis?" Jisoo was the one who answered, which made me nod my head and smiled at them.

While Lisa just smiled and tapped my hand from her arm, but it felt like she's slowly taking it off before she stood up and carried Chealse on her arms.

"Princess, do you want to go and play with me outside?" I heard her say to our daughter, and she was about to walk off, but I just felt so bothered to what she was acting that I held her shirt, stopping her from walking out.

Lisa looked at me, her eyes questioning why I'm stopping her, but I only sighed, and the pain was starting to ignite when I felt disappointed with everything.

I was not expecting all of this to happen. I thought that when I got back, she would be so clingy that she wouldn't even dare to be away from me even with just an inches just like before, but now. I felt like she was avoiding me.

"C-can we talk?" I asked softly. Not really wanting to show to everyone how hurt I am right now.

Lisa stopped and looked around before she nodded and gave our daughter to Jisoo, who just smiled awkwardly at us.

I just followed her, and I thought that she would bring me up to her room, but I felt disappointed again when she brought me back to

the living room of her house.

Lisa gestured me to sit, but I didn't oblige. Instead, I held her face and kissed her suddenly.

I felt her stiffend, shocked even. I felt how she held her breathed, and I smiled mentally when her hands went to my waist and responded to my kisses.

Oh God, I missed her so much.

Our head moves in sync, kissing in such familiar rhythm like before. How she held me securely, how she gripped my waist. How she moaned and groaned loudly and how she inserted her tongue inside my mouth, and the familiar surge of desire ignited me.

"Lis," I moaned in her mouth, and I was shocked when she stopped and pushed me slightly.

I looked at her, confused.

Why?

I mean, we were okay, right? Jisoo told me everything, that she tried having other women in the club, how she become worse when we were gone but she wouldn't have found other woman that she loved other than me. I know how crazy she was with me before, how crazy we are for each other. She wouldn't just find and have someone new for those 3 years have passed.

She was looking at me like she did something so wrong. It's like she's regretting that she kissed me back, but why would she? She's my wife. We are married, and I have the right to do such passionate things with her.

"C-Chaeng, I- I have something to te-"

"Lisa!!"

"Chaeng!!"

We both stopped and looked at Jisoo, who was running towards

where we were. She's panicking, breathless even

"What happened?" Lisa was the one who asked, but I already knew why she was acting like that.

"It's Chealse," I mumbled, and not even a second Lisa immediately ran back inside the kitchen.

---

Jennie's POV

After Lisa left, I stayed the whole day resting in my room. I missed her and I've been trying to call her after an hour she left but she's not really answering her phone. I'm getting worried when half the day has passed, and she's still not texting nor answering my calls.

I decided to go out of my room and went down to look for mom. Maybe she saw Lisa's grandparents, and they knew where Lisa was.

"I thought you're going to stay all day in your room", she teases but the blushed on her face was still evident which made me remember that she knew that there's 'something' going on with Lisa and I.

"Mom," I whined and took a glass of water from the fridge to calm my heated cheeks. We both laughed at what we were acting until we settled down and smiled at each other.

"I'm so happy for you," she said and hugged me.

"Me too, mom. Lisa, she's the sweetest person. She made me the happiest I've ever been, " I told her, which made my mother squell, gushing with Lisa and I's love story.

"That's cute. She's Lisa, and she's cold, but when it comes to you. She's like she transforms into a new person that you're the only one who knew." My mom commented, and I couldn't agree more.

Lisa, she made me so much happy. She didn't even make me feel that there was lacking with me despite my innocence. Despite all the gaps between us, it's like nothing could be a hindrance in showing how we love each other. We are just so happy and in love.

She made me feel safe and prioritised in any way she could. She didn't even give me doubt despite her past with other girls and what amused me when she stopped smoking and drinking and having drugs. She completely turns into a different person. She became better,even without telling her anything about her vices. She just showed me how sincere she was for the both of us.

Now, we are planning on living together peacefully. Away from everyone, and I know there will be a lot of challenges, but as long as we are always together, as long as she will choose me. I would always be there for her, no matter what happens.

I asked if she had seen Lisa's grandparents, but what confused me when she told me that they weren't everywhere in town.

Usually, they are always present in the church for the daily mass, or at least they will roam around the place and have a date together.

I was about to ask if mom knew something, but I stopped when I heard the doorbell rang.

My heart immediately pounded when I thought that maybe it was Lisa. I quickly ran towards the entrance, and I even heard my mom laughing on how whipped I was, but I just ignored her and opened the door, but my heart dropped when I saw someone unexpectedly familiar.

"Taehyung," I mumbled his name against my breath

---

# Chapter 32

Come on, let me hear your thoughts, guys. Please don't hesitate to comment and share your opinion. I'm really curious about what you feel □.

Chaeng's POV

I was panicking and crying while Lisa drove the car so fast. Her eyes were bloodshot while she kept looking at our daughters condition.

My heart was pounding so loud. I can't think straight, I was supposed to tell Lisa about Chealse's sickeness, and then this happened. We just got back together, after years of being apart, and now, my daughter -

"Chaeng!! Please tell me what is happening?!" She shouted. There was irritation in her tone, but I couldn't really blame her. She's worried for our daughter and didn't even know that she's not alright.

"She's sick, Lisa. And I will tell you more about it later just please drive!!" I cried out.

I'm scared.

I'm so scared for our daughter. I've been warned by her doctors before. Her medication is not responding well with her body. She's getting thiner, and her health was dropping, and it feels like I've been in a nightmare when I'm in a coma, and when I woke up, it's much worse. My daughter has cancer, and my wife thought we were dead.

Goddammit!!!

If it weren't for my parents. We wouldn't have been suffering like

this. We could have done something to make Chealse's condition better.

-

"Help!! Please help!" I cried together with Lisa while she carried our daughter in her arms. Thankfully, the staff immediately took care of our child and settled her in the emergency room.

We were about to get inside, but they stopped us before we could enter.

"Ahhhh!!!" I flinched when Lisa shouted and punched the wall with frustration. She was full-blown crying, wheeping in such distress as she continued to hit the wall near us.

I walked closer towards her and hugged my wife tightly. She's shaking, scared, frightened, maybe because of the trauma of the accident years ago.

"Lisa, babe. She's going to be alright. I'm here. Please calm down. " I gently said while I rubbed her back, hoping it could ease her pain and make her calm.

She struggled at first, but after a moment, I felt her hand hugging me back tightly while she cried in my arms.

"I- I'm scared. Babe, I'm scared that both of you will leave me again. "

I tried my best not to cry to what she called me. It was the first time I heard it again, and it felt like we were back like before. Before all of this happened.

I pulled away and kissed her lips, unable to contain my happiness, and it doubled when she held me tighter and kissed me back with so much passion.

She kissed me like she's scared that I'll be gone again. She kissed me with so much emotion while her hand was holding my waist carefully.

"Listen to me, I won't be gone. Chealse will be alright, okay? Everything will be alright, " I mumbled while my forehead rested against hers while I gently massaged her nape.

I remembered it clearly. How doing this to her could make her calm despite how angry she was.

I'm just looking at Lisa. She's clenching her eyes tightly while she continues to hold me and cry silently until the doctor comes out.

She quickly pulled away from me but not before holding my hand.

"How is my daughter?" She worriedly asked. Her tears were building up again, so I gently tugged her hand and held it tightly. Making her feel that she's not alone, that I'm with her to fight for all of these.

Lisa looked at me before she focused back on the doctor.

"The patients condition is stable, for now. However, her condition and symptoms are found to be severe. If I may ask, what's the patients medical history?"

I gulped hard and looked at Lisa. My chest tightened, scared and worried for our daughter's condition.

"She's diagnosed with Severe Aplastic Anaemia back in Australia," After I told the doctor the truth, Lisa's hand slowly swift off from mine. Her tears fell again, and she shouted her pain and agony for our daughter's condition. She was crying so hard , gasping for air, and that she ended up kneeling down on the floor. I quickly went to Lisa and hugged her tightly, saying how sorry I was, how stupid I was as a mother to let our daughter suffer all of this.

The doctor looks at us with sympathy before he continues to say something regarding Chealse's health. I tried to help Lisa to stand up, and she quickly held the doctor's hand.

"Please, save her. There are measures, I'm a doctor myself I know the procedure. I can help, " she rumbled.

As a parent, I know how the hurt Lisa is right now. I'm not different

when the first time I knew about Chealse's condition. I was devastated, in pain. I even felt stupid for making my daughter suffer.

"Our daughter needs a donor. A bone marrow transplant to produce blood cells for her, and I already got examined to be one, but I'm not capable. The doctors tried to match mine with hers , but it's ou-" I stopped when Lisa hugged me tightly. I could hear how sorry she was for not looking for us. For not identifying the corpse before, and just giving up without her doing anything.

"I'm here. I could be her donor. I could be a match. She's my daughter Chaeng. And I can't be a useless parent for her. You've done everything you could, and it's now my turn to save her. " I just keep on nodding my head while hearing Lisa talk. I know how our situation is just so hard, but at least right now, I have her. I have her to fight with me for our daughter's sake.

"I suggest you should contact the patients doctor and schedule for the examination to be her donor and proceed with the operation ASAP. Let me be honest, her condition is getting worse from the physical exam we performed. She's a possible candidate for comatose patients and will eventually lead to her death if not treated eventually. "

---

Jennie's POV

1 week.

It's been 1 week since I last saw Lisa. It's been 1 week since I ever heard her voice, and in those 1 weeks, she never replied to any of my messages.

I don't know what happened. We were so happy just before she left my house. We were even talking and planning about our decision to move out and live in the States, but now. Even just a glimpse of her, she's nowhere to be found.

My mother said that even the old Manoban couple quickly left since

they were not seen roaming around in Busan. I'm actually worried for them because something seems so different, it's like they are fleeing for an emergency that I don't know about.

"Hey, your ice cream is melting." I quickly rolled my eyes when my childhood friend interrupted my thoughts. He said he just came home from abroad after finishing his freshmen year in college.

But what bothers me was that he always keeps on following me around. Whenever I go, he's behind me, just like now.

I'm not really like this, but I'm already outside Lisa's house. I am waiting for someone to come out or get inside the place unexpectedly because I know something is wrong, and I'm so worried that maybe something bad had happened to my girlfriend and they are just hiding it from me.

I didn't answer him and just put the ice cream away. That made him frown.

"I bought it for you," he complained, and tightly held my arm that made me groan in pain, and I looked at him confusedly.

I groaned and pulled my hand back from him.

"What's with you? Since you came back here. You kept on getting close to me. You keep on asking my hand for marriage, and I kept on telling you that I have a girlfriend, and we are not staying here anymore. So, please, Tae, get the hell off of me!!"

What I said stunned him. His brows furrowed, and he held my arm again. It was getting tighter , his nose was flaring while the veins on his neck were so evident.

"Who do you think you are?! If it weren't for my family, you are all begg-"

I gasped loudly when someone punched him. Then, when I looked up, Lisa was already looking at me worriedly.

"Lis," I called her name, and I immediately hugged her tightly, expressing how much I missed her. I felt her hugging me back,

smelling my scent before she pulled away.

"Why are you here? And who's this? Is he harassing you? Are you alright? " I smiled when she asked me all of those questions, and I was about to answer her, but Tae stood up and was about to attack Lisa

So, I quickly held Lisa's hand and ran towards her house. The security opened the gate for us, and I was laughing when we were finally left alone.

But I stopped when she suddenly took her hand away, and seriously looked at me. I felt my heart skip a beat for not a good reason when she did that.

"I-is there something wrong?" I stuttered, feeling nervous because of what she's acting.

I'm confused. Isn't it supposed to be the other way around? She didn't contact me for a week, and now she has the guts to act to like this with me?

She looked down, fidgeting before she looked back at me, and I saw how her eyes watered, and I got shocked when she hugged me suddenly and cried while she buried her head on my neck.

I don't know what was happening, nor I don't know what I was supposed to do. But there is a feeling inside me that she's not okay, that we are not okay.

Did she do something wrong? Did she have sex with other girls while we were in a relationship? Or did she have problems with her father or anyone?

Seriously, I'm so blank and puzzled to why she's acting like this.

"I'm - I am so sorry, baby. Yo- yo don't deserve me." She mumbled, repeating that she's sorry that she don't know what to do, that I don't deserve her.

I held my breath and looked up to stop myself from crying. While my hands gently wrapped around her waist, I tapped her back to

comfort her.

"C-can you tell me what's going on?" My voice broke when I finally asked that. I felt her stop, and we both pulled from our hug.

She was crying while she held my face. Her eyes screamed sorry and pained the way she stared at me.

"You're scaring me," I honestly told her, and I tried to smile slightly to at least make the atmosphere light, but she only shook her head.

"I didn't mean to hide this from you, but the situation was just so complicated, and I- I really don't know what I'm going to do -"

"Just please tell me Lisa!!" I shouted. The tension and the nervousness I'm feeling were making the situation worse, and I wanted to know the truth.

"My family. Chaeng and Chealse are alive. "

I froze, and my body felt cold literally when I heard that from her. My hands are shaking, surprised to what she confess.

"What?" I asked

"The-they are back. They are alive. It's a miracle that they are alive and Jennie. I wanted my family back,"

I immediately slap her face when she said those to me. I can't believe it. I can't

"Oh my God," I cried, and I was about to walk off, but she had already held my hand and forced me to look at her.

"Let go of me!!" I shouted and tried to take my hand away, but she's so much stronger.

"You want your family, right?!! Then I'm letting you go!!!" I told her, even though I know to myself that I wanted her despite her family coming back, but what can I do? It's her choice, her decision, and as much as possible, I don't want to be a hindrance towards her family.

"Please!! Please Lisa, let go, " I begged because if she keeps on holding me, I know any moment from now. I will be kneeling down before her, begging her to just choose me instead of them.

"Plea -" I froze when I felt her soft lips against mine. Both our tears fell down, and we ended up tasting the salty substance in between our kisses. I tried to fight, and I tried to hesitate, but I already got lost when she held my waist tightly, and I ended up kissing her back.

I surrender myself towards her. I felt weak just by the thought of her losing and letting me go. She's mine. Lisa is mine, and if being a mistress could make her stay with me, I will be willing to be anything just for her.

It's a sin to God's sight. It's a crime in the law. No matter how we thought about it. It's wrong, despite the love we have for each other. We know we can't be together legally.

"I love you. I love you so much to just let you go, Jennie." I remained silent while I rested my head on her chest.

Her heartbeat was so loud and rapidly beating together with mine while we held each other tightly.

"I chose you. I promised that I'll choose you despite everything, but Jennie -"

I pulled away, and she held my hand. Her eyes were begging to let me listen to her, to understand her.

And even how tight my chest is. On how hurt I am to the situation we are facing. I nodded my head, and I gently held her face.

"Chealse, my daughter. She's sick, and she's diagnosed with anaemia, and the reason I didn't contact you for the whole week is because of her treatment and the results found that I'm not compatible to be a donor, nor was Chaeng"

When she mentioned her wife's name, it felt like my heart was stabbed many times, but I just kept silent and eagerly waited for her to finish.

"Please understand the situation, baby. You know I chose you, and I will choose you over and over again, but. My daughters transplant needed a close family to be a donor, and" she stopped and tightly held my hand. She closed her eyes tightly, clenching it before she stared back at me. Her bloodshot eyes and dark eyebags are making me worry and nervous about what she will tell me.

"And what, Lisa?" My anxiety was growing that I ended up asking her what she wanted to tell me. My chest slowly tightens that it feels like I'm unable to breathe, and just -

"We needed to have a sibling for Chealse. Chaeng and I needed to m-make an-other child to be our daughter's bone marrow donor."

# Chapter 33

All the events and plot of the story are all in the authors idea. This is just fanfiction and purely coincidental, if ever. I got the idea as a med student about Severe Aplastic Anaemia, and it was only possible for a donor if it's full-blooded siblings.

Anyways, all your reactions are valid, guys. I appreciate your thoughts about the story however its still not done, so hang on and trust the process.

Don't hesitate to comment and share your thoughts. I'll always read it every time. It's been so long since I've updated, so so so busy with school. I'm on duty for this whole semester, that's why.

Thank you for reading, guys. Enjoy and hold on!!

3rd Person's POV ( 6 years ago )

"Lisa, I had enough of this. I had enough of you!!," Rosé shouted. Her eyes were in tears while she looked at her lovers' guilty eyes.

Lisa tried to walk closer to her and wanted to hold her hand, but Rosé shoved it away and was about to walk off.

"No, please, babe. Don't leave. Come on," Lisa begs. She's on her knees while she holds her girlfriend's hand, begging her to give her a chance. A chance to fight for their relationship that seem cold and so vague now after being together for so many years.

No one cheated. No one fell out of love, but Chaeng was tired. She's tired of understanding her girlfriend. Ever since Lisa entered med-school, she didn't have time to spend for Rosé. She was busy, and with clinical studies, hospital duty , and exams, that had been taking so much of her time to the point that she forgot their anniversary of years of being together.

"No, please. I understand and support you with your dreams of being a surgeon, but I'm not going to stay and let you made feel like I'm not important."

"No, babe. You're important to me. In fact, you're the most important person in my life. it's just that all of this, I'm working and studying so hard for our future, "Lisa tried to explain, repeating the same sentences every time Rosie would have tantrums like this. However, this was a different case it was their anniversary, and yet Lisa forgot about it.

Rosé rolled her eyes and tried to take her hands off from the latter. Grunting, while she cried to just let Lisa let go of her, but her girlfriend was persistent. She loves her Rosie so much to just let her go.

"Please, babe, Rosé, I promise. I'll make more effort for us. I'll make it up to you, please," Lisa begged again, standing in front of her girlfriend while she held her face. Both of them eyes were crying and hurt by the situation they were having.

This time, Chaeng calmed down. No matter what she would do, of course she loves her girlfriend. She understands her and accepts what Lisa can only give to her. However, she's just a person after all, and forgetting their anniversary is just too much to take.

Rosé sighed and nodded her head. Her chest tightened, but she knew it would hurt much more if she would leave her girlfriend after all those years of being together.

"This -" she sniffed and nodded her head, which made Lisa smile and kiss her cheeks.

"This will be the last time, Lisa," Rośe added, and the latter immediately nodded her head while hugging her girlfriend tightly, and Rosé stopped crying while hugging her back.

"I promise, babe. This won't happen again," With that, they both looked at each other. Sharing their smiles while Lisa held her face, and Rosé's arm wrapped her neck, gently rubbing her nape as their gazed are locked together.

"Happy anniversary," Lisa whispered, which made Rosé laugh at the irony. They just fought about their anniversary being forgotten that almost led to a break up, but now, here they are. Reconciling their relationship together.

Both of their lips collide, kissing passionately and torridly wanting to catch up on the days that they were not together. Holding each other body, caressing it smoothly, while Lisa carried her towards Rosie's room.

But they stopped when Lisa's phone rang. Their heartbeats were loud, and they still continued to kiss each other again, but the call was persistent, leaving Lisa no choice but to answer it.

"I'm sorry, let me just answer it," Rosé nodded her head, wanting to hide the disappointment on her face, but Lisa still saw it and kissed her lips shortly, apologising for the interruption.

Rosé sat back on her bed, trying to play with her pillow while she looked at her girlfriend.

"Yes, hello?," Lisa said over the phone. Even if the speaker was not on, Rosé could still hear how the sound came from Lisa's phone.

She was just staring at Lisa, anticipating what was going on. Waiting for what her girlfriend will say to her after the call. But then her chest starts to tighten again. While on the call, Lisa looks at her apologetically. She knew what it meant, it already happened before many, many times so she knew that her girlfriend needed to go.

"I am so sorry, babe. I'm needed in the hospital, there's an accident and"

"Stop explaining, just go," With that Rosé climbs to her bed and covered her self with a blanket. Her eyes start to water while biting her lips to stifle her sob.

She heard Lisa sighed. She also didn't want to leave her girl, but she needed to. Despite her reasons, she knew that the university won't consider her if she won't go.

Lisa hastily gathered her things, leaving a necklace on the bedside table as a gift for her girlfriend, and before she left, she went and kissed Rosé's forehead over the blanket. It's better to do that because once she sees how her eyes cry for her, she knows she'll stay for her lover despite the hospital needing her.

---

It's been 48 hours, and Lisa didn't have time to message her girl. She didn't have time to talk to her even for just a few minutes because she's been stuck in the operating room and in the ward for those two days, with no sleep and just a 5 minute break that she could use for a coffee to wake her system up.

She knew where she was wrong. She knew that she should at least update or text her girlfriend, but the time and her workload were limiting her.

Lisa opened her locker, and her phone had been vibrating nonstop. To the point her co-intern has been glaring at her, to how annoying her phone sounds.

She just smiled fakely at them before she looked at her phone and didn't know whether to be happy or not when she saw not a single message nor a notification from Chaeng.

Her eyes started to water, to the pain she felt, and to her girlfriend was enduring. But she can't just stop for her dream, given that they are well off. Many people dreamt of having her position as a rich man's daughter, but it is still different if she can achieve the dream she has for herself. Especially that, as a newbie, she worked hard to ace the exams, which made her an intern with her age, and it also made most of her co-interns hate her since it was not hidden that her parents are very well known and influential.

She was about to call her girlfriend to explain, but her brows furrowed when Jisoo's number was displayed on her phone.

"Hello?" She answered immediately, worried that maybe something wrong was going on.

A loud sound was heard over Lisa's phone. But what makes her worried when a manly voice answered.

"Hi? Is this Lisa? I have a customer in here. She's been calling your name, and she's madly drunk. I think you need to pick her up. " With that, Lisa nodded her head, worried for her girlfriend's best friend, who became her friend as well, after those years.

The man told Lisa the address, and she didn't wait and quickly ran towards her car while taking her belongings.

---

Jisoo was drunk, to the point that she's already stumbling while she danced on the dance floor. Her head was high, while she laughed out loud and ended up crying again, calling out Lisa's name.

Rosé came to her in the morning, ranting to how could Lisa choose her career over her. Ranting to how she doesn't deserve how Lisa is treating her while she just listens and talks to how lucky she was that despite Lisa's busy state she still found time to explain to her everything, it may not be enough but at least the latter still bothered to do it.

When Rosé left, her heart was hammering in pain, hurt to why her best friend could be loved, and cherish when she's the one who knew Lisa first.

Her best friend knew that she had an admiration for Lisa. Rosé was very aware of how whip she was, but faith played with them when Lisa chose Jisoo's best friend.

She was devastated and even felt betrayed because that was her best friend , and yet Rosé fell to Lisa. However, there was nothing she could do, she can't just ignore them and waste the time when Rosé was there for her.

But every time Rosé would rant on how Lisa was lacking in their relationship, she's hurt on behalf of Lisa. If it's only just she was the one Lisa fell in love with, she would be there to support her, to love her, and to cherish her no matter what happens, but she's not. And

now she's drunk and alone on the dance floor, saying Lisa's name again and again.

"Jisoo!" The latter immediately knew whose voice it belonged. She couldn't even hide the smile she had on her face when she saw the woman whom she fell in love with.

"L-Lisa," she uttered her name, and the tall woman dragged her out in the bar, making sure that she won't stumble after paying all Jisoo's order.

"What are you thinking? Drinking out and alone like this?!" Lisa shouted while she held Jisoo's hand and walked towards her car.

But Jisoo only cried and laughed at the same time, making Lisa stop and look at her bewilderd, confused as to why she was acting like this.

"Ji-Jisoo, are you alright?" She asked and held the latter's face while she wiped the tears away from her eyes.

But the latter only smiled and gently shook her head. She even took Lisa's hand away and tried to walk to her car, but when she's about to fall, Lisa caught her and pulled her closer towards her.

This time, Jisoo's heart pounded faster. She was nervous, she was scared and even with her drunken state she was conscious about herself.

"Jisoo," Lisa called her worriedly, their eyes met.

"It should have been me,"

"What?" Lisa confusedly asked, and Jisoo, who was drunk, who was not in her normal state, held Lisa's face gently.

"I should be the one who was in my best friend place. I should be the one you were supposed to love and not Chaeng. The - then you wouldn't have suffering like this"

Lisa's brows creased in confusedment. She doesn't understand where this was coming from and when she was about to ask Jisoo what

she meant.

"I- I love you, Lisa. I love you first before Chaeng did. I was there with you before she came, I was the one who supported you first on your dream. We -we talked about it for hours on how I will attend law school while you enter the medicine. L- Lisa we, we even debated whether which was important, la- law or m-med. We d-did it all together fi-first be-before she came"

Shock was understatement, Lisa couldn't even move her eyes nor breathe to what Jisoo confessed to her. This was the first time it happened, and she's stuck. She's --

"Why, couldn't you just love me? Why couldn't you just choose me? I promise, Lisa, I promise I will support you, I won't bother you with your dreams. Instead, I'll be there whenever you need me. Just choose me, love me please, "

"Jis-"

---

Rosé cried when she saw how Jisoo kissed Lisa. She was about to fetch her when Lisa texted about what happened, but then she witnessed how Jisoo confessed to their supposed to be love story.

In the past, Lisa was falling for Jisoo. She admired her, like how Jisoo does, but Chaeng got in the way, saying that Jisoo is having feelings with one of Jisoo's classmates. She's used it as a way to make Lisa love her instead, and that's how they have the relationship they have right now.

It was built in a lie, and now her best friend was claiming the relationship that was supposed to be hers. She doesn't know why, but she just runs off like a coward because she is guilty and hated herself for everything she has done to Jisoo and to Lisa. She's been so selfish and always thought about how she felt but never with others.

She found herself with Eun Woo, her childhood friend. This time, she didn't rant how the people behave towards her. She vented out

how toxic she was, on how she put herself first before others. She cried and sob hard, hating herself, saying how she deserved the pain instead of Lisa and Jisoo.

"But what can I do? Even though I knew it was wrong. I love Lisa. I love her so much, that's why I became I like this" she shouted to her friend and Eun woo only nodded his head and poured another glass for her.

He listens, he understood, and he was there while Rosie cried about everything.

"It's alright. It was the past. Let it go, Rosie and I know, and I saw how Jisoo cared for you, and I know how Lisa loves you as well. " he tried to comfort, but Chaeng couldn't just accept that she did all of those things that hurt the people she loves.

They stayed for many hours, drinking and crying and talking about everything. They heard each others thoughts, and they appreciated every word that they didn't know that they've been engrossed with the emotions they were feeling that their face moved closer.

Both of their minds were hazy and blank. Their lips touched together, and their hands caressed each others bodies. They were panting, they knew in their subconsciousness that this was wrong, that they shouldn't be doing this, but the situation was putting them in the 'did' that shouldn't be done.

Until they found theirselves in the morning, naked and tangled with each other.

---

Here is your Lisoo part. It's not much, but I hope you appreciated it ❤.

# Chapter 34

Jennie's POV

"W-what?" I stuttered. It felt like my ear rang when I heard what she told me. I understood it clearly. I'm not dumb nor innocent enough to not get her point.

Lisa sighed loudly before she held my face, and there her eyes that were begging me to listen to her, but I just couldn't. I can't. Those eyes that I've fallen in love with are begging me to let her sleep with her wife.

I am not that low to just let it happen.

"No-, no Lisa no. I can take to be your mistress, but sleeping with your wife again while you told me you love me is just so much to take!!" I shouted. My chest hurt so much that it felt like thousands of needles had been pricking it to hurt me, to torture me.

I tried to shove her hand away, but she held my hand firmly, and her eyes watered, and I don't know what hurt the most when I saw her slowly and weakly kneeling infront of me.

"P-please, baby." She cried out, hugging my knees tightly so just I won't run and leave her. But what can I do? If I let her do what she wanted, it would also ruin me.

It's not that I'm selfish, but being her mistress is already worse. I didn't even think of myself being like one, and yet I'm letting it happen. I'm making myself a lowly mistress because I know that not having her will be the worst feeling.

"Jennie!"I was back on my trance when she suddenly went up. She held my hand tightly while her eyes glimmers with a little hope. Somehow, I trusted her that there will be another way to solve this problem.

"I will-- I will tell Chaeng that I have you. That you made me happy, and I'm filling a divorce baby. Just please don't leave me. "

There are many words that keep coming out of her mouth, but all I could hear was just divorce, Chaeng, and to not leave her.

I would be a hypocrite if what she said didn't make me happy. I didn't even think of it as an option, yet Lisa, she was thinking of having a divorce just to keep me with her.

Fine, I surrender.

I'll stay with her. I'll stay with her no matter what as long as we get to be together. That's what she promised me, and so far after being in a relationship with her, there's not even a problem althrough out our relationship. If her family didn't come back, we would not be suffering like this. We would be planning our lives in the States away from this place.

---

We were on our way to Seoul. Lisa was driving while she kept on holding and glancing at me on my seat. Even though she won't tell me, I know she's troubled by her decision, and I understand her. The situation was just so complicated, even though I couldn't think straight.

"Are you alright?" I looked back at her when she talked for the first time. Her eyes were very tired, and yet I could still admit that she's the most handsome person I ever met.

I just nooded my head and smiled slightly at her. The grip of her hands became tighter while she pulled it to her face and kissed the back of my hand. It made my heart melt at her gesture. If things weren't like this, I would pull her and kiss her passionately.

"I love you," she told me. Her eyes watered while she kept on glancing at me, and my heart was beating loudly. It was melting and fluttering. It was getting wilder and wilder, and I don't think I can behave just like I hope I'll be.

"Stop the car," I told her, and fortunately, she did and parked the

car on the side of the road, and just before she could react I immediately took my seat belt off and held her face and kissed her.

I kissed her like my life depends on it. I kissed and held her face so gently and tightly, scared that I might lose her. She made me so happy and completely and stupidly in love with her. I fell so deep. It's like I'm in an infinite loop, and all I'm doing is just loving her so much that I'm going to go insane if she'll be gone and leave me.

"Choose me. Lisa, choose me, and I promise. I ought my life to love you dearly, please. " I beg, this was the first time that I swallowed so much of my pride because of someone.

I grew up having what I wanted. Even though I'm a church girl, just like people called me. I was spoiled, I was cherished, I was a princess to both of my parents, and yet now, I'm here, looking at my lover's eyes, begging to choose me instead of the family she lost years ago.

Lisa looked at me worriedly. Her eyes were red while she held my hand from her face, and the only hope that I'm holding were her words, that she would divorce her wife and just save their child, but the more we got closer to Seoul the more my chest hurts.

What if, when we get there, Lisa will realise that she loves her wife more than she loved me. What if she abandoned me because she realised that her family was much more important.

I can't help but overthink.

We just met. Lisa and I met not even half the time she spent with her wife and family. They are married, they have the same age, they grew up almost with each other, that have a child. Who needed her family the most. They were separated before and now that they got the chance to be with each other again. I became the hindrance of their family, but I couldn't give a care about them. They were long gone, and Lisa and I were supposed to be happy.

If they didn't just come back. If they could be in other places. If only they are really dead. Lisa and I wouldn't be suffering like this.

"Jennie!!!" I felt Lisa shook my body. She was worried, and I felt myself hyperventilating. I couldn't able to catch my breath, I'm getting lethargic, I'm losing focus, and my vision was getting blurry.

"Li- Lisa," I called her name while I held her face gently. My heart was painfully beating against my chest while I moved my face closer to her, and a relief washed over me when I felt her lips touch mine.

"I love you. And I'll choose you. No matter what happens. I'll be yours forever. "

When she said those words to me, the only thing I could do was to trust her. To listen to her, to just hold tighter.

"I love you too. I love you very much, " I mumbled softly. My tears immediately fell while Lisa wiped it away. She kissed my eyes, down to my cheeks, and jaw, until she reached my neck and there she smelled my scent, while her hands went to my waist and gently pulled me closer to her.

I'm now straddling on her lap while we kissed passionately. My arms are wrapped around her waist, securely holding her. My back arc, my hips moves, and both our breathes were getting louder.

"You saved me. You're my angel who saved me from hell, " she utters before she took my shirt away, unhooked my brassiere and gently, and slowly touched and carress my breast. While she keeps kissing me in my neck, licking it down to my collarbone, and suck it. Leaving marks in me.

She was very gentle and soft while touching me. Until she looked up and there I saw how her eyes shone while looking at me.

I smiled at her. And gently held her face, and I moved closer to kiss her lips, and I even left a mark on her neck before I took her shirt off and my heart instantly pounded for the nth time when I saw my initials on her chest. My hands were shaking while I carress it. It's the most beautiful thing that someone did to me.

"I admit I'm scared, Lis. I admit that I don't trust you enough, and I

admit that my insecurities will never help us. However, being able to hold you like this and just being with you is enough to fight all of my insecurities. You own my heart, baby. You own every inch of me. From the moment I first saw you, I'm already yours."

I saw her smile, even her teeth showed up, while she held my face. And hug me tightly, and her face was buried on my chest, listening to my heartbeat while I gently massaged her scalp.

"Falling in love with you was never part of my plan. I wanted to take you to just fuck you hard and ruined you, but baby you're just so beautiful inside and out to be treated that way. You're just so innocent and too fragile that I'm the one who falls so much harder. We will get through this, leave everything to me, baby."

Lisa's hand went my legs, caressing it up until my underwear was exposed, her lips were kissing my breasts, leaving marks before she suck one of my nipples that sent sensation over my body.

Goosebumps appeared on my skin, my eyes instantly closed, and my mouth parted open. My moans were out, and loud, gasping every time her mouth sucks my nipples and teased my areola.

A week without her was very bland, and just by her simple kisses and touches made me sensually sensitive.

"Oh, Lisa." I moaned her name and pulled her to kiss me, and her tongue went inside my mouth. Sucking my own before she gently tugged my underwear on the side. I even felt her hard manhood pressed against my dripping centre.

I bit her shoulder to stop myself from moaning loudly. Wrapping my arms around her head while I let her do what we both wanted.

I saw how she unbuttoned her jeans and unzipped her zipper, and I helped her tugged it down, revealing the shaft that I'm so familiar with. I even felt a light shyness when I saw it again, but my mind loses when Lisa guides my waist, and I feel how her dick slides inside me.

We both groaned loudly, even with the little light from the post

away from us, I saw how Lisa tightly closed her eyes while she moved her hips and I could only gasp and moaned loudly with all her thrust, it went so deep inside me that it made me so weak and breathless.

"Jen-nnie," she called my name, and before I could react, she had already suck my mouth.

Her hands are holding my waist tightly, and both our sweats are dropping endlessly, making it hard for me to hold her.

"Oh! Oh! SHIT!!" I screamed when Lisa adjusted her shaft and directly hit my gspot. Now I have become wilder, I moved my own hips, I shouted , I moaned so loud, my legs were wrapped around her body while Lisa sucked my breast.

All I could hear was the loud moans and groans that came from our mouths. We were so engrossed in what we were doing, pleasuring each others bodies, thrusting, grunting, moaning. We were making love inside her car while it was parked on the side of the road.

"Cumming, I'm cumming baby" Lisa mumbled while she moved so much faster and I'm so lost to tell her that I'm about to reach bei-

"Fuck!! OH fuck!! LISAAAAAAAAA" I shouted and kissed her hard, while I felt her grunted and tried to kiss me back while she moves faster, she groaned, even her veins was about to pop up, while we both moaned out ou orgasmic bliss.

"Ohhhh, Goooooood!!"I whimpered when I felt her warm seed inside me. It was so much as it sprayed inside my walls.

We didn't move. We were just holding each others bodies while trying to catch our breath, as we both looked into each others eyes, smiling from ear to ear.

"Don't you ever leave me," I breathlessly said, which made her smile, and after some time, we laughed loudly while nodding her head, assuring me that she won't.

She helped me put back my brassiere and shirt, we both settled down, but I'm still straddling her lap as we hugged and cuddled

each other.

But I got confused when her body went stiff, and when I pulled away, she was looking behind my back. Her eyes went wide and scared, and just before I could see what's behind, I felt her move and hug me tightly, and all I could hear was a loud crashing of both cars collided with ours.

# Chapter 35

Jennie's POV

All I could hear were loud sirens, loud talks by the others, and I felt like I'm frozen. I can't move my body. It hurts so everywhere, and all I can see are the bright lights and white walls, and

"What's the case and identification of the patient?"

" Female, GCS is 3, and VS is unstable cause by trauma in a vehicular accident." My heart starts to hammers, and my body feels colder.

Oh God

I cried while I tried to look at my side, and my chest hurt more when I saw Lisa's body on the bed while doctor's are around her, checking her condition.

I couldn't take to just watcher her, so I slowly stood up, but I was immediately stopped by a nurse.

"Ma'am, please lay down," she told me, but I couldn't just follow what she said when my girlfriend was lying unconsciously because of me, If -

If she didn't hold my body, if she didn't protect me after the accident. I, I should be the one lying in there and not her.

"L-lisa," I mumbled her name painfully while I still tried to get up while I kept shouting her name, while I keep shouting on how I love her, and I wanted to get closer to her but these nurses held me tightly keeping me away from wanting to get close to my lover.

"No, P-please . I beg you. Sh-e , she needs me, " I cried, but the nurses only looked at me with sympathy.

"We understand, we really do, but you needed treatment, so does she, so ma'am, please settle yourself?" she tried to explain, but I still couldn't do what she wanted as I tried to resist and wanted to get up and run to Lisa while doctors still looked at her condition.

"HR is dropping, and I can't see pulse. Please ready the defliblator. "

Even when I don't understand that they are saying I knew Lisa is not okay. I know that she's barely fighting. I felt nauseated and anxious while I looked at her while she fought for her life, and just like in movies, her monitor started to beep loudly.

"Charged 120. Clear?"

"Clear"

When Lisa's body jumped, my heart bounced literally and rushed of adrenaline, which pushed me to get off from the nurses who were holding me tightly.

I cried while I went closer to Lisa. My heart ached when I saw her state much clearer, she looks so lifeless, so pale and weak.

"Still no response, doctor." I looked at the doctor who became so frustrated while she charged the machine again.

"Nooo!! Lisa, please fight baby, Oh, God please, " I cried and shouted while the nurses tried to hold me tighter when I tried to move closer to Lisa.

"Charged 200. Clear?"

"Clear"

But still, a flatline is all I could hear. Even the doctors and nurses look at me with apologetic eyes.

"No! You don't want to give up on her!! You won't!!" I shouted as I pushed the nurses away and held Lisa's face. It hurts, Oh God, it hurt so much,seeing her like this.

My tears continued to fall while I held her, tapping her face and

wanting to wake her up.

"Baby, ple-please. Please wake up!!"I shouted as I tried to climb her bed and gestured my hand to do cpr. I've watched so much medical dramas to not know this kind of thing.

I saw how the staff tried to stop me, but I didn't budge and did what I wanted to do.

"Y- you, you don't get to leave me, Lisa. Wake up!!" I panted, while I told her that, I'm not even stopping on doing chest compression above her.

"Do- don't you ever. Ever leave me!!"

"Ba- baby, please!!!"

But, it didn't even make changes. The monitor still keeps on beeping a flatline.

"No, no. Don't you dare fuck!!"

"Fuck!! Please!! Lisaaaaaa!!!!"

I hit her chest so hard until I felt a sudden pain in my stomach that made me almost fall and my vision lost and all I could hear left was the doctor telling her time of death.

---

I clenched eyes tightly when the light hit my eyes. It made me nauseated that I ended up rushing towards the restroom. My body feels so weak, while I keep on vomiting everything inside me.

"Baby, are you alright?" I look up, and my heart starts to beat madly, confused as to how she ended up being here.

"Mom?" I asked while she put her things aside and went to me, smiling like a great mother she is.

My mother helped me to stand up and gave me a glass of water to rinse my mouth. She didn't say a thing. She just guided me and

helped me settle back in my bed.

"I knew what happened, and" she stopped and held my hand, her tears started to fall, and kissed my head.

I'm confused, I don't know why she's crying, I don't know what is happening, but then memories of Lisa dying in my arms struck me.

"Oh, oh God. Mo- Mommy, " I called my mother, and she immediately nodded her head and hugged me as tight as she could while I could only cry in so much pain when I remembered how, Lisa, my lover--

"Yo-your dad, your dad is the reason why you got an accident."

It feels like my world broke apart by what my mother said. I can't believe it. There's no way he could do that , even if he doesn't like Lisa very much. There's no chance that he would harm me.

"The driver who hit both of you told the police that it was Taylor who paid him to do such things."

"Mo-mom, there's no -"

"Of course, I know, sweetie, and I know. Oh Christ, help us. " My mom continued to mumble as we cried together to these unfortunate events that's been happening to us.

We both pulled away when a doctor came. She was smiling while walking towards us.

"Good morning," she greeted, bowing at both of us before she asked the nurse about my chart.

I don't know why, but somehow, I suddenly felt scared, anxious, and the pain of having someone I lost mixed with my emotions.

"According to your chart, there's not severe complications overall, just small bruises and wounds, and with a good rest and medication, you'll be out in no time", she told us, but there still some hesitation on her face, its like she's waiting for my mother to give her a signal whether to say more or not.

I looked at my mother, questioning why the doctors felt hesitant, but I went silent, and I felt how my body got cold when I heard what she meant.

"You're 2 months pregnant Ms.Kim"

She told me more information about my health and complications, about how fortunate I was despite the accident happening, but I can't seem able to function.

I got stuck, frozen even.

I don't know how to act.

I'm having a child, I'm pregnant.

At such a young age.

Oh my God

"Jennie, it's alright, sweetie, it's fine. I understand. I'm here. Mommy's here," I heard my mother comforted me, and I can't help but cry, and weep and hug my mother.

I felt guilty, I promise that I'll won't be like other girls, that I won't be a disappointment to them but here I am .

"Mo-mommy, I- I want to see Lisa. I want to see her. Please!!" Instead of asking forgiveness towards my mother, that's the thing I told her

She's Lisa and I's baby, our own child. What we did was wrong. Nothing was right about it, and yet there's still so much happiness that I only felt whenever I'm with her. And now, that I learned about my pregnancy, I had hope. I felt the happiness that I thought I lost after I heard about her death.

"I don't care whether she's alive or not. I want to see her. Let me see her mommy, ple. "

I was willing to beg, I was willing to cry and kneel to just let me go and let me see Lisa, but I only felt the nurse holding my arm while

injecting something on my skin, until I felt weak and lost and I passed out.

--

It was already dark when I woke up. My mother was not here. No one was with me. I got confused at first, but I remembered how things happened, which made me get up and hastily walk outside my room, taking my IV off of me.

I could feel how my heart beat so much, how it bang against my chest, and how my hands get moist and cold while I walk towards the nurses station.

I wanted to ask where Lisa's body was, I wanted to see her and tell her my gift of us having a child and maybe, just maybe.

"Oh God, I'm going crazy," I mumbled against my breath as I weakly walked, but then I got stopped when someone held my arm.

"You're Jennie, right?" A tall and blonde woman asked me, I could even feel how she tightened her grip on my arm while she waited for me to answer.

Before I could answer, I felt her pulling to one of the rooms.

It was very silent and cold inside this room. I don't know her, but somehow I felt a sudden urge to hate her. We were just looking at each others eyes, I'm nfused to who she is.

"She's alive," she told me.

I creased my brows when I didn't get what she meant, and I tried to pull my hand away from her, but she only held it tighter and looked at me, like I've done something against her.

"Do I know you?" I can't help but ask. She's confusing me. She's getti-

"I'm Lisa's wife. My name is Chaeyoung. It's nice to finally meet you. " And that's the time she finally let's go of my arm.

It feels like time stopped, and my brain won't function properly. She's Lisa's what?

"I've heard what happened, and thanks to what you did, Lisa, my wife was able to survive."

I unconsciously clench my fist when she mentioned Lisa as her wife. They are married yes, but Lisa already chose me. She doesn't have the right to claim her.

"I want to see her. Where is she?" I asked instead.

I don't have time talking to her. She's not important anymore, Lisa and I talked about this, and I trust her, and now that I learned that she's alive, she gives me so much hope and happiness that everything will go as we both wanted.

"Don't go near her. She doesn't need you." What she said made my blood boils. It's like I have the urge to hurt her, to pull her hair and make her realise that in between the two of us Lisa wanted me and not her.

"Who are you to tell me that? " I fought back, and I saw how her eyes widened, maybe surprised to what I'm acting.

Yes, I'm young, but I'm not that innocent anymore. Lisa taught me how to fight and not just let other people hurt my pride and ego, and at this moment, Lisa is all the matters to me

I admit that facing her like this made me insecure about myself. She's beautiful and intimidating in some way. She looks innocent, and yet you know that she's not someone easy to deal with.

"I told you--"

"Chaeng!! There you are!! I've been looking for you. Lisa is awake. "

We both look at someone who was excitedly calling Chaeng, informing about Lisa's condition. I was the one who acted first, pulling Jisoo out of the room as I remembered her name before. She's the one I first thought was Lisa's wife.

As I recall, I haven't really apologized to her about what I did, but it can wait. Lisa is much more important.

"Where is she?" I asked while I kept looking at every room, and my chest won't calm down. It gets worse and worse the more I step closer to where Lisa was.

I felt her stop so I look at her confusedly, creasing my brows showing on how I'm starting to get irritated to what she's doing but then, she suddenly went inside to a room and I didn't think twice to enter and follow her.

And there I saw Lisa lying on the bed, with a bandage around her head, her monitor beeping every second while her wife was holding her hand as they cried together.

I felt a relief that she was alright but the pain while I saw both of them crying at each others arm, feels like I've been stabbed many times.

"L- Lisa" I gently uttered her name which made all the people in the room look at us . I didn't mind all of them and focus to the love of my life.

But the her expression changed, her eyes was curious as it widens and looks so confused. It was different when she was still looking at Chaeng.

"I'm sorry, but you are??" Lisa asked confusedly

---

Uh hi? Is there still someone reading this?

# Chapter 36

Jennie's POV

I felt how my heart dropped, how it tightened against my chest, and get crumbled when she asked me the question I was not expecting. I wanted to tell her who I was in her life, but it felt like my body froze, and my mouth won't open.

"Li-, I am your -"

"She's no one, babe,"

I looked at Rośe, completely puzzled.

She didn't just do that.

"Chaeng, I think it's better to let Li-." I looked at Jisoo when she tried to talk, but her friend just brushed her off and held Lisa's face in front of me.

And I felt weaker and weaker the more I see both of them all smiling and acting all sweet and in love while I stood in front of them.

"Actually, she just got lost. Don't mind her. " she stated and gave a peck to Lisa's lips before looking at me,insulting me with her smirk and smiles.

I wanted to scream, I wanted to shout and hurt her, but it felt like I got controlled and stuck to what I'm seeing.

So, is this how it ends?

The moment that Lisa was about to choose me and stayed with me. She won't remember a thing about me?

Oh God!.

Is this how I get after I choose to find my happiness instead of being a nun and serve God in all my life?

If so, this isn't really fair.

---

When I went back to my room, my mom was worriedly waiting for me. Her eyes were puff like mine, while I could only run towards her and hug her as tight as I could.

"I- it hurts," I cried, and wheep while my tears flowed endlessly in my eyes.

I never expected it to be like this. I never thought that I could feel this too much pain because of loving someone.

"Shh, hush now, baby. Mommy's here, I won't leave you, " my mother comforted me. I don't know if she knows the reason why I'm crying, but somehow, having her by my side softens my heart a bit.

"Your doctor will be discharging you tomorrow. And -" I pulled away when she stopped, and she seemed to hesitate to what she's about to say,

I looked at my mom, encouraging her to continue, while I didn't know that I'm holding her dress tightly.

"I decided that we will go to New Zealand and have a fresh start for you and your baby,"

---

Lisa's POV

"Well, this is peaceful," I mumbled against my breath while I looked at the stars above me. The cold wind that brushes against my skin made me shiver slightly as I grip the glass on my hand.

"You need a little time to enjoy as well, Lis. You've been stuck with your work and won't leave your hospital. " I smiled at Jisoo's remarks and clicked my glass against hers before I drank mine and

stared back at her.

"I've been really workaholic in these past years, am I?" I tried to say, and Jisoo just laughs and gestures for me to take a seat.

"I would be lying if I said no," she mocked, which made me laugh and took my seat.

I closed my eyes as I rested my back in on the soft couched while I thought about what had happened these past years.

After I lost my memory, Rosie filled me with lies about what truly happened, and I continued to stay with her for months until I found out that I was not Chealse's real parent. I got my heart broken at that time, to the point that I was about to go back to how I've been before, but that was the reason as well that I started to have the memories I lost before the accident. It was gradually coming back to me, and I don't know if it should be a blessing or not because I'm too late to realise that I lost the person who I genuinely love.

"I miss her chu," I cried as I put my arm above my head, while I suppressed my sob from crying louder and bit my lips.

I felt her sit next to me, and I cried against her chest while she shush and comforted me.

"I'm sorry, I'm very sorry, Lis. If I only knew that Chelsea was not yours, I would have told you the truth about Jennie. It's just that - "

I stood up and smiled at her, nodding my head before I wiped my tears away as I clearly remembered how I asked her about the initials tattoed on my chest.

Jisoo lied to me about it, saying that it was just some random letters, and I believed her. However, I understand her reasons as well.

Chaeng's daughter needed a donor, and it would be difficult to happen if I do remember who Jennie was in my life.

They played with me, hid me from the truth, and manipulated my feelings. I felt stupid, I was like an idiot why they talked and told

me things that were full of lies and betrayal.

But what's worse was that I found out that after all those shits, I was not the parent at all, and I would have never thought that I'm going to hear Rosie and her friend about the right he have for his daughter.

"I'm going," that's all I said before my chest could burst up with this pain and emotions of hatred, anger, and pity for myself.

---

I went home to the house I built for Jennie. This was supposed to be my gift for her before she would enter college, but yeah, things happened.

Three years had passed when I moved to the US, and after I learned the truth, and that's when I also knew about this place. I never knew that I could be this smitten to such a beautiful young woman.

My smile broke when I saw both our pictures displayed in our living room. It was the two of us while we went out for the first time. It was such a lovely day, with the person I love so much, but I guess good things won't last in my case.

"I miss you so much, baby." I told her picture. Her smile that cause such havoc into my heart, that would send butterflies that I have not experienced by anyone else.

I was about to fall asleep on my couch when I heard my phone ring, and when I saw who it was, my heart started to beat louder unexpectedly.

"Hello?" I greeted while I wiped my eyes and put my glasses back and settled on my seat.

I heard the sound of papers and stuff until the sound of excitement came from my private investigator.

"I found her, damn. I finally found her Lis!!" He shouted, which made me stand up and walk abruptly to nowhere. My hands were shaking and starting to get damp, and my chest, it beats so much

louder.

"Bam, are you serious?" I don't know why I ask that, but that's the words that came first out of my mouth.

Oh God, I'm rambling!!!

"Fucking yes, Lisa. I finally found her. Wait, let's meet tomorrow? Or do you want to come now?" He said that made me grab my jacket and nod my head hastily even though he couldn't see me.

"I will, I'm coming, I'm just going to change - no, there's no time. I'm coming over asshole" I shut my phone off, quickly took my car keys, and drove towards his place.

"Jennie, oh my Goodness Jennie!!" I mumbled her name while my eyes watered, and my mouth couldn't even hide the smile and happiness that I've never felt for so long.

---

After long hours of flight, I just landed at the place Bambam's informat had seen her. She was studying pre-law at one of the biggest universities in New Zealand, and I've never been so proud of her.

I'm glad that after what happened, she still continues to move on and be the person who she wanted to be. We didn't really know where she was staying, but at least I have a head-start to where I can possibly see her.

"Lisa Manoban?"I nodded my head to the assistant I hired for my stay. He told me that my hotel was ready and the staff were already waiting for me,but I declined his offer and told him to drive me to the university where Jennie was studying.

I don't have time to rest, I need to see her. My mind and heart are in havoc every time I thought about seeing her again after all those years.

My assistant smiled and opened the door for me. When I got settled, my forehead started to sweat, even my palm moistened, and I

became so fidgety.

I'm not usually like this, even with my first surgery as an intern before my emotions are controlled, but today,

At this moment, it's just so different.

I smiled when I thought that I'm feeling like this because of Jennie.

Finally, I can see her again.

I don't really know what to do after, but just, please, God. Just a glimpse of her. It would make me the happiest person in the world.

Along the busy streets, my mind wondered what she looked like after the years that have passed by. But I would bet my whole life that she would always be so beautiful as a mature woman.

"We have arrived." I looked at him anxiously.

"I'm nervous," I honestly told him, even though he didn't know the reason why. It just felt like I needed to tell him because if not, I would totally shit myself out.

I saw him smile, somehow that at least comforted me as I tapped my chest, hoping it would calm me down, but

Fuck!! I don't know.

I can't do this

I can't see her

I'm not ready

My hand forms a fist, while I tightly closed my eyes and inhaled deeply.

Come on Lisa, you can do this.

You just need to see her.

Just see her.

"Fuck!!... fine!! Okay!!"

My assistant look at me weirdly before he smiles at me awkwardly and shrug his shoulder, waiting for me to make a decision.

Shit!

Shit!

"We need to go back," I mumbled cowardly and settled back again on my seat.

I closed my eyes again, and I felt how the car drove off, and again, my chest tightened. This was my chance to see her, to tell her how much I love her, but why?

Why the hell do I feel like the moment I will see her, it will hurt me more than to just endure the longing I have for her.

I miss Jennie, I miss her so bad.

I sighed loudly as I slowly opened my eyes and saw the busy streets again. College student roam around with their friends and how they cling towards their lovers.

Fine, I admit. I'm scared

I'm scared to see Jennie being happy with someone else. I'm scared to see how she would look at the man like how she looked at me before.

It just pains me. My mind would think that somehow I don't deserve the pain it will cost me, but also, I'm mature enough to think that she shouldn't have been or have suffered before if I didn't came on her life.

She deserves so much better, and I'm afraid that she found it with someone else while I'm still progressing to be the person she deserves.

"You won't know what will happen if you won't try to see and take risk with the possibilities." My thought was cutted off when I heard

-

"I'm sorry, but may I know your name?" He smiled on the rear view mirror before he answered me.

"James, James Byrd"

I nodded my head and thought about what he said.

He was kinda right, though, but it would take a lot of courage to choose a decision that you would know would hurt you.

"Life is a maze. You will either choose to be happy or live a neutral life. If you won't take risks now? When would it be? The more you let time pass, the more you'll lose your chances. "

"I don't know," I answered him honestly, and my eyes watered as I looked at him.

"I'm afraid... I'm afraid that she hated me. And won't talk to me, and it is just so complicated. " I groaned I frustrations as my hands covered my face, and how I felt the tears fell from my eyes.

"I understand." He said, and I grip the seat tightly.

"I- please turn back," and my heart starts to beat louder and louder again that it's starting to hurt my chest.

And the moment he parks the car, I went out before I could change my mind and ran towards the schools entrance.

"Goddamit, I don't even know where she was," I mumbled against my breath while I looked around their campus.

"Do you know Jennie? " I asked one of the students and my face grimace when she didn't know who she was.

I run, and I look almost the entire university, but why the hell that I still couldn't see her.

I sighed tirelessly and sat to one of the benches as I looked around their school park. My sweats were dropping endlessly while I kept

on catching my breath, disappointed with myself and the situation I'm in.

As I was about to give up and decided to just go home, someone shouted her name, and as I looked behind me.

There, I saw her.

The woman I love so much.

The woman who captures my heart.

Is now with someone else.

# Chapter 37

Jennie's POV

"Come on, Jen, it's already starting." I rolled my eyes because of how my friend is acting. She's been like this ever since our school announced the new investor in our school, and as a welcome, they prepared an event specifically for this.

"My little legs can't keep up, Sana," I tried to explain, but she only groaned and didn't have a choice but to wait for me to get closer.

I just laughed internally because I didn't want her to see me laughing at her. The investor that she's so hooked up with was a multi award winner as one of the successful and youngest surgeons in the world, and Sana is in the medical field, so I can't really blame her for being excited to meet her idol.

It's kind of ironic because of the different fields we have, and yet we have built this amazing friendship that I didn't know I could still have.

I mean, I have friends back in SoKor, but what we have is just so special.

When we arrived inside the auditorium, she really took the front as she excitedly tap the seat near her, wanting for me to move faster. To be honest, she's really a bothersome, but as a good friend that I am, I just mocked what she's acting and purposely moved slower.

"Oh my Goooood!!" She exclaims, and I literally laugh hard and just do what she wanted.

We got settled and and I looked at her when she held my hand, and I just giggled on how cute she looked while we waited for the program to start.

"Can you tell me again how old she is?" I curiously ask while the monitor displays all of guests' achievements all around America.

"I think she's about to turn 32, and oh- she's Thai," she excitedly shared, and I nooded my head, taking mental note about it.

"I can't properly see her face. It's always in a mask or blurry," I noticed, and that was when Sana looked at me again, grinning.

"That's why I'm very excited Jen, oh God. She never revealed her face. She was on a hiatus before, when something personal happened, and then she decided to continue her passion. To be honest, I also don't know her name, just P.B , and I heard that was not even her true initials. "

"So she's kinda mysterious doctor or something?" I commented, and she excitedly nods again. It was like she's so happy that I'm starting to understand why she's so looking forward to this event.

"Good morning, ladies." we both look at V when he came towards us. He smiled and sited next to me before handling both of us our coffee.

I thanked him for his gesture, and so did Sana and I sigh when he suddenly kissed my cheek.

"Anything for you," he said and winked at me.

After a year of staying in New Zealand, V and I met, and he was also the one who helped my father get out of prison. It was discovered that it was my dad's rival in politics who planned the accident years ago. I wanted to come back to personally apologise to Lisa for dragging her with my family's problem, but I also thought that it's all worthless now.

But I did try, though, that I just hope I didn't take the chance before.

I was devastated when I heard about her family and how she's doing so well in her life because at some point I hoped that Lisa will be able to remember me and choose to find me, but after those years, I never heard again about her.

"What do you want for lunch?" I looked at him and smiled his gestures.

"Burger and fries would be amazing."

"No, nothing but that, never mind. I'll just order a salad for you. " My smile faded at what he said. What I learned about Tae was that he's a health freak and kinda controlling. Even Sana noticed it as well, and I felt that she's about to say something, so I held her hand and signalled her to calm down.

She groaned loudly before she glared at Tae and at me, that I just smiled apologetically.

Tae helped my family so much. A little sacrifice with my cravings is nothing compared to what he did for us.

"Good morning, everyone!!!" I look at the MC who suddenly appeared and excitedly greeted everyone in the auditorium.

"Shit!! It's starting, " I matches Sana's smiles as she stands up and jumps happily. Her hands were clamped together while gushing at the stage in front of us.

"Ugh! I hate it when she's acting like that. " I heard Tae mumbled that made me groan and glared at him.

Okay, that was enough.

After the years that have happened to me, I've grown mature, and that's why I'm trying my best to understand Tae's attitude because I thought that's just how he is but its too much when he's acting like this just because of how Sana is enjoying herself.

"You should leave," I told him

His eyes went wide, maybe shock to what I said, but I just rolled my eyes and pushed his body away.

"You're being too much Tae if you don't like what you're seeing, then you should walk out. I've had enough of you. " it didn't just happen one time, and I even tried talking to him about it, but I

guess he doesn't know how to change himself for good

He was about to explain, but I pulled Sana's hand and walked away from him. I even felt my friend tugging her hand off, but I only just stopped when I heard the name I wasn't expecting to hear.

"Please welcome. Dr. Lalisa Manoban"

My mind shutted off, my ear rang, and I felt how my heart dropped and started to beat abnormally.

It felt like time stopped working. It felt like the whole world got frozen as I slowly moved my head, and again, for the nth time, my heart was beating so loud that it's starting to hurt my chest.

"Fucking hell!! I was not expecting that face. Oh God, she's a whole meal. Jennie, are you seeing this?" I was back in my trance when Sana shook my body.

"I'm going out." I shouted on her ear, and I was about to walk off, but she held my hand and worriedly looked at me.

"Are you alright? You look pale, and your skin feels so cold, Jen. " she tried to say, but I didn't say a thing and took my hand off of her as I ran out of the place.

--

"Jisoos," I mumbled breathlessly while ran my hand through my hair. My hands were even shaking and damp with my sweats because of what happened inside the event.

The doctor that Sana was gushing over was Lisa. Oh God, oh my goodness. Why now?

Why the hell did she come just now when everything was starting to get better.

I stayed in my departments library half of the day. I'm thinking about my life, about Korea, about her, and yeah, fine. All I did was think about Lisa.

After those years, I haven't heard about her, but I do admit there was no time that I didn't think about how she's doing.

She's my first love, after all. My greatest love, and also my first in everything.

She made such a big impact in my life that it was so hard living those years without her. She helped me see my whole value, my happiness, and what I really wanted.

But life is not always clouds and rainbows. There was always a storm, the storm of truth that she's not mine to start with, that I was only that someone that will only be part of her life but never the ending, and the irony was that, she don't even remember that I became part of her life before. That we were happy and complete at each others arms even with our differences.

Especially now that she didn't even know that we have a son together. Yes, I continued my pregnancy, I entered college a year late to ensure my child's health and that he would be born strong and healthy, and my sacrifices was paid off when I first held him in my arms.

Also, it's kind of reason that I can't really forget about Lisa was that, he really looked a lot like her, from his nose down to his lips, it's like the mini version of my first love and I have been hoping that one day, he would meet his other parent and hope that Lisa would accept him as his son.

No one knew about him, though, not even Tae or Sana. My dad was the one who suggested making my son his own. At first, I didn't want to and tried to protest, but the more I thought about it, it would be better to make my parents the temporary guardian of my own son.

I was hurt, but it's for the best. I don't want him to grow up confused about his identity. Lisa was not around, and I'm too young and stupid to have decisions for him. Also, at that time, I was still in the process of accepting my faith and losing Lisa.

"Here you are, I was looking for you." I smiled when Sana sat in

front of me. Her expression seemed worried while she held my hand and carress it.

"Is everything alright?" She added, and I just sighed and smiled at her, nodding my brows up, wanting to tell her that I'm alright.

"Liar," I laugh at what she said, and after a moment, I ended up crying, biting my lips to suppress the tears and sob that wanting to go out of my mouth.

I hate her.

I hated Lisa so much

And I wish and hope that she would burn to hell to what she did to me.

I understood that she had her own family, but that doesn't give her the right to call me whore and a liar.

Yes

I tried to tell her about me and my son after I gave birth to Leo. I went to her house secretly in Seoul, disregarding my parents' decision about staying away from Korea. I travelled on my own, with my son on my arms, with a little hope that she would at least hear me out, but my pain doubled when only the maid went out to talk to me and said that I shouldn't bother her with lies and even gave me money to shut me up.

I cried so much at that time. I was so broken and hurt, and I felt pathetic as I looked at her on their window. Her eyes didn't look regretful nor confused. She was just waiting for me to leave, not even bothering to at least glimpse her son that I was holding.

I know that she won't remember a thing, but she can't just treat us that way.

"Drive me home, please. I want to see Leo, I want to see my son, " I softly mumbled. I don't know if she heard me clearly, but I felt like I lost my care about it, and I just badly want to get home.

"Okay," Sana replied hesitantly before she guided me out of the library.

I felt how she's so hesitant to her actions and in how confused she was to what I'm acting because I never really showed her this side of me, but after I saw Lisa all the memories struck me like lightning.

"Can you wait for me here, Jen? I just need to get my car. " I just nodded my head and smiled slightly at her. I'm thankful that despite what I'm acting on, she didn't really force me to open up and just stayed by my side.

I do trust Sana, but I'm just not ready. I always thought about the possibilities that could happened and I'm not courageous enough to deal with it.

While waiting for her, my mind wondered again to that certain doctor, and just like how I felt the first time I saw her, I was really insecure. She's out there living her dreams and fulfilling the profession she wanted. I know it takes time to get there, but it just seems so unfair.

I struggled and got wounded so deeply because of what happened. And seeing her again feels like I got slap of the reality, that I didn't grow, and I'm still the same Jennie she knew before.

"Are you Jennie Kim?" I looked at the 5 buffed men confusedly. They were wearing these black suits, encircling and trapping me from where I'm standing.

"I- uhh why?" I asked. Instead , my heart started to beat nervously. I'm confused and scared. My body started to feel cold and shivered while I looked at each and one of them.

One of the men held his ear, and I just fathom that there was an earpiece attached to it, and my nervousness doubled when he nodded his head to his colleague and the two of them held my arm tightly.

"Nooo, what - what is this!!"

"Let go of me!!!" I struggled to shout, but it seemed like they didn't hear a thing as they continued to drag me to a black car.

"Ple- please, no. Heeeelpp!!! OH God, help meeeeee!!" I continued to shout, but I only felt weak when someone covered my mouth and nose as I slowly lost my consciousness.

---

I was woken up by sunlight that touched my skin, I even held my head because I felt it throbbed while I looked around the place.

The room looks beautiful.

There were flowers, and the designs were vintage while the sun shone around the place. I can even hear the sound of waves outside from where I am

Wait, wave?

I immediately ran through the nearest window, and my eyes went wide when I saw a beach and the vast amount of water that surrounded the place.

But then I remembered what had happened, and my chest started to beat painfully.

'Oh God,' I thought while I slowly got up and tried to find my things to ask for help, but even though I searched everywhere, I still couldn't see it.

"Shit!!" I can't help but to curse as my tears slowly fell from my eyes.

When do all of these things will end.

I'm so tired of dealing with all these pain and confusement, and all these problems.

Even though I didn't really know what happened, I already lost hope as I slowly slumped myself down the couch. I broke down as I thought about my life, especially my son.

"Leo," I mumbled his name as I cried. My palms were on my face and weep loudly.

Everything hurts, not just physically but mentally as well. I'm exhausted, I- I just want these pain to end, I just want to -

"Hello Jennie, it's been a long time. Isn't baby?"

When I heard her voice again, I immediately stood up, and I confirmed my suspicion the first tme I heard her voice and I swear to God that I would stab my heart on how it dared to beat insanely fast, for this woman in front of me.

"L- Lisa"

# Chapter 38

Jennie's POV

"I- ah," I was stunned and confused

I don't know what to say or to react. She's here.

She's here in front of me, and we're standing in the same room.

I moved back when she walked closer. Her eyes were blank, but the emotions behind it, they were longing and full of hope.

What is this

Did she already remember who I was, and now she would come and did all this stunt and expect me to want her as well.

"No!" I shouted, which made her stop.

"Baby, it's me. Lisa, I'm here, and I'm back fo - " I quickly ran outside, leaving her in that room.

I'm done

She had her chances before, and she's couldn't just come and act like something never happened. When I saw her eyes, I felt rage, I felt so much anger now that I looked at her.

My heart pounded loudly, and adrenaline rushed to my veins as I looked for my way outside this large house. Thankfully, I didn't encounter anyone, as I continued to flee and find my way -

After I found the door, I ran as fast as I could, opening it hastily and rushed barefoot out of the house. It's all sand anyway. All I need to worry about is how can I get out of this place.

-

I stopped to one of the trees as I tried to catch my breath while I roamed my eyes around the place. I was not expecting it to be this big, I've been running for more than an hour now, but all I could see was water and sand and these trees.

In a place like this, there could be a pathway that could lead me back to the city or just a place that I can have someone to ask help with.

Fortunately, I have my wristwatch with me. It's past 10 already, and that's why I'm starting to feel hungry, and the weather was a bit hot.

But I could worry about it later, my son needs me and I need him as well to keep my mind sane from all of these things.

I just can't believe Lisa could do this to me. She became much worse than before. She's so evil and a freaking psycho.

I sighed loudly as I thought of continuing my pace, I still didn't lose hope. I'm sure I can have someone who will come and find me. If she was able to take me here, I'm sure I can find my way out.

As I walked slowly towards the jungle, I felt a branch snap below me, and my heart pounded nervously as I slowly fell down a manhole.

-

"Heeeeeelp!!!" I shouted

"I'm stuck in here!!"

"Please, help me!!!"

I cried out as I slumped myself down the rock I'm sitting. My frustration was getting over me as I thought about what happened with my life

I saw my ex lover

She illegally took me to this unknown place

I run off from her

And now I'm stuck inside this damn manhole with an injured ankle

What a god damn life.

"Jisoos," I sighed and wiped my tears away while I looked up the hole above me. It's the only source of light that I could utilise because the place is all dark and cold, and if I'll be stuck here for the night I just knew it would be the end of me.

Not to mention, the place is giving me creeps. I'm not used to something like this, the sound of crickets , the bat's, and I could even hear a snake hissing.

I'm scared

I'm fucking scared

Well who wouldn't.

If you've been stuck in a hole that you're kinda aware that there are so many creatures that could stick to your skin or crawl on your back and could take you life in a second, you come here and tell me that everything will be alright, that I shouldn't be scared.

"God, I'm going crazy," I mumbled helplessly while I continued to cry, and -

I stopped when I heard the bushes and a sound of footsteps above me. Somehow, I felt hope as I slowly stood up and waved my hands above the hole.

"Heeeeeelp!! I'm hereeeee, " I shouted again and again, and my heart beat loudly when someone moved closer to where I was.

"Jennie? Is that you?!!"

Lisa?

But, ughh!!

"Y- yes!! It's me. Lisa, help me!!" I don't have a choice but to ask for her help. If I'll continue to hide in this place, I really don't know how to survive a night in here.

I'm injured, and I know that she probably would take me to a clinic or something, and at that time, maybe I could ask for help.

"Keep shouting, Jen," she instructed, and finally, she found me.

My heart skipped a beat for the nth time when I saw her looking so worriedly at me. Her eyes glistened while she stared at my situation.

"I'm sorry, you shouldn't be suffering like this," she said

---

"Hey, move slowly,"

But I didn't. I continued to walk faster while she guided me on my waist, and my arms were around her shoulder.

I really don't have a choice now, do I?

"Ugh!!" I groaned loudly when I didn't realise that I put my foot down on the ground, which led me to stumble and sat on the sand.

"Damn you, Lisa!!!" I can help but exclaim. She looked surprised at what I did, but I couldn't carelessly and just rolled my eyes at her.

"If you didn't take me to this place, this shouldn't have happened to me!"

I heard her sighed loudly before putting her hands on her waist and looking down at me.

"If you didn't run away, you shouldn't have injured yourself!!" She fought back.

I was about to say something, but I could only squell when she took me on her shoulder and carried me like a sack.

"What the- put me down you psycho!" I shouted and even punched her back, but she just acted like she never heard a thing.

"Heeeeelp!!!!"

"Someone kidnap me!! Please heeeelp!!" I continue to shout, but I only felt how Lisa's shoulder moved up and down and gently put me at the entrance of her house, gesturing me to sit to the cushion swing

I didn't want to, but if I really want to get out in this place, I should really save my energy. But of course, I still continued to shout for help. Maybe she has neighbours around here that could -

"No one will be able to hear you, Jen, so please shut your mouth!!"

I looked at her, piercing my eyes to her dark ones , resisting her, worried gaze while she stared at me.

No, I won't be that same Jennie who will fall just because of her damn pretty eyes.

"Why? Is it because you have your men to take me on a secluded private island that is under your name, and the only people who are here are the two of us?!!" I can't help but shout, I'm getting frustrated, angry, and mad, and -

"Yes," I stopped and looked at her. My eyes narrowed.

"Excuse me, what?" I sass, my mind stopped working while she stood in front of me.

I stared at her while she walked closer and sat by my side, taking my hands from me while showing me her perfect set of teeth.

Her grinned is making me mad, and I just --

"Even if you run around and try to escape from me baby, you can't, because all you can see around her are trees and sand, those creepy creatures that you're mumbling about and those vast amount of water. You can't escape from me. You're trapped here, with me, for as long as I want. "

When she finished her sentence, all I could think about was Leo. My son, who I left alone back in the city, I know that my parents are there to take care of him but just the thought that I won't able to see him, and hold him is making me depress.

I looked at Lisa while she's smiling at me. My hands were on her face while she kept kissing it, and just before she could say another thing I already slapped her hard on her face.

"You're the worst person I ever met in my life." I said and quickly went inside her house, or should I say my prison.

I stayed inside the room that was on the first floor. It's not as big as the first one I got, but it's better than to take the stairs.

I cried silently while I looked outside through the window. My mind kept wondering my son, how he was doing, or if he was worried about me. I don't know what was happening back in the city, but I do hope Leo is alright, just him God. Please take care of my son while I try to find a way to get out of here.

"Hey," my thoughts were cutted off when I heard Lisa from the door. I sighed and sited on the couch while she slowly went inside the room. I saw her pull a cart, and I immediately smelled the scent coming from the food.

"Please eat, I know all of this is confusing, and I know you're mad, but I couldn't just let other people have you, Jen," she said which made me stunned and stared at her unbelievably.

"There's a medicine kit below. Take care of yourself." That's was she said before she smiled slightly and closed the door.

Silence filled the room as I looked up to stop the tears from falling down. My heart ached for an unknown reason while I stared at the food she prepared for me.

I know what she's doing, but I won't be a fool anymore to believe and trust the lies she's showing me.

If she really does want me. She should have looked for us the moment she knew remebered me. I went to her house, and she

knew that I existed, but after those years, she just made this stunt and kept me on this island like a damn prisoner.

"I hate you so much," I mumbled while I looked at the door she went out from.

My first thought about it is to lock myself in, but I just knew that she had the key come and pry it open. I shake my head and slowly walk my way to the cart and open the foods she prepared.

"At least she learned how to cook."

I moved the cart near the coffee table, and I arranged everything. I ate and drank the foods she prepared for me. After that, I stood up and went to open a closet, and I was shocked to see it full of clothes.

My heart ached as I thought that maybe she had other women before me in this place. But who am I to pry, and rant about what she's doing.

We're done

For me, it's like she never existed.

After I took a bath and changed new clothes, the sun had already settled. The room started to get dark, and I saw that it's past 6 already, and for all those hours that had gone by, I had never heard anything from outside.

I'm starting to get worried about her. It's not safe outside. She should have been home before it gets too dark.

I was about to go out and look for her. However, I heard a door open, and now I'm limping my way to the couch, and I needed to act like nothing happened. Fortunately, I arrived first and lay myself down, and I acted that I'm sleeping.

My heart was restless, and it continued to beat louder when I heard the door open and footsteps went closer to me.

I really don't know what she's doing because I was facing my face

away from her, and also, my eyes are close, and all I could do trust my fifth sense.

Then I felt her sited next to me, her perfume that I got so addicted before invading my system with a hint of cigarette. I thought she had stopped smoking, but why is she

I wanted to ask her about it, but there's something that's stopping me from moving, and I just sighed internally, and I waited, and I was hoping that she would say anything, just anything that could make me change my mind.

However, my hopes crushed me when I felt her move, and the sound of her footsteps away from me broke my heart for the nth time.

I just formed a fist on my hand as I cried silently for what she did. For making me hurt and making me stupid every time she's near me.

---

I woke up with the loud sound of the waves meeting the shore. The moonlight touched my skin as I looked at the time, but then I got confused when I'm already in bed, and I saw that my ankle had changed on how I treated it. Now, it looked neat and tidy.

Of course, there's no one else who did it. It's just the two of us in this place.

I was about to step out of bed when my door was harshly open, and it brought out Lisa, who was walking towards me, and my heart started to hammers against my chest when I smelt alcohol from her.

"Li- Lisa, wh-what are you doing?" I tried to asked but it felt like she didn't hear a thing I said when she held my face tightly and crushed her lips against mine.

"Oh baby, I'm going to fuck the hell out of you tonight" she mumbled before she ripped my clothes and held me tightly.

-

Don't hate me for not updating regularly.

# Chapter 39

Jennie's POV ⚠

Lisa's words woke me up. My sleepy state vanish when she held my body too tightly. Her cold hands marked my skin while I tried to get away.

"No!!" I shouted and shook my body to protest, but her eyes glared at me. She was furious. She was sheeting, her eyes were bloodshot, her brows furrowed while grunting to stop me from moving.

"Why? You love this, Jennie. You love how I touches you!!" She said, and her teeth were gritting. She looks so mad.

"Li-lisa," I called her name, hoping it could make her stop, but she only shook her head and pushed me back in the bed with so much force.

My heart was pounding so loud, my hands were shaking, and my body felt so cold to how frightened I was. This isn't her. This wasn't the same Lisa I knew before.

"You're mine, Jennie. There's no way others can touch you like I do. No one, "

She caught her breath, and the veins of her neck were about to pop while she walked closer to me. I don't know what was happening, nor I don't know what to do.

Fear succumbed by body, and my mind couldn't even think about how I could get away from her. I know I can't run because of my ankle, and I knew it would be useless to shout because there's only the two of us in this damn place.

"Ple- please, Lisa, stop what you're doing," I cried, my tears fell. I admit that I'm scared, my clothes are half torn, and there's no

blanket that could cover myself.

I could only beg her to come to her sense and stop what she's doing because it's scaring the living shit out of me.

I froze when I heard her laugh. Her voice echoed around the place while she moved and sited next to me. I gasped when her hand touched my face, I flinched when she moved closer, and when I tried to move away, I grunted in pain when she grasped my hair tightly.

My eyes widened while I looked at her.

What was happening.

"I saw you. I saw you hanging around with that pathetic boy. I even heard you call out his name while you sleep. Damn you Jennie, how could you!!" She shouted, and I just tightly closed my eyes when she slap me.

Stunned was an understatement, she-

No, the Lisa I knew would never lay a hand over me. She would never hurt me.

This isn't Lisa

I held my face. It felt swollen already, and I even tasted the metallic iron from my mouth. I looked up at her, wanting to know what gotten into her. To what pushed her to be acting like this, but I only felt myself shiver when she held my jaw tightly, so tight that I can felt it bruising, while she force me to straightly looked at her.

"This soft lips of yours, does anyone tasted this aside from me?" She asked, her voice tone down a bit, but force was still there. That if ever I would say the wrong answer, I just knew she could hurt me again.

I stayed silent, I wanted to look tough while I glared at her. It won't make any changes now if this will be my faith. At least I stood my ground.

I didn't answer her question, but I made an expression that I had someone kiss me other than her.

My body fell colder, and my nervousness doubles when she smirked, until it turned to grinned and pushed my body back down the bed, that I ended up lying helplessly.

I looked at her when she stepped back, her teeth gritting, and I could only flinch when she shouted and took the vase near her and threw it across the room.

"FUUUUCK!! FUCK YOU JENNIEEEE!!" she was gone mad. Her eyes were flaming in anger, and her sweats were dropping down endlessly while she kept shouting and throwing things carelessly.

I'm scared, I'm so scared of her that I can't even move a finger to stop her, to make her shut up.

"W-why are you doing this?" I cried, I can't fake it anymore , she's frightening me.

I moved back when she stepped closer, but I could only cry when she held my feet and pulled me towards her. I tried to kick her face, moving my body to protect myself, but she was stronger.

"Lis- Lisa, stop. What are you doing. This - this isn't you!!" I tried to say, but it feels like she didn't hear me. Instead, she lays on top of me, putting her weight on mine while she locks my hands above and ties it with her belt. I tried to get away from her, to at least free my hands, from her, but it was all useless when she had already done it.

Her smile was shown after she's done. My clothes were ripped apart, and only my underwear was left.

She stood up before me. It was like a demon, looking and planning to what unholy things she could do after tying me up.

I tried to take my hands off, I cried and shouted, calling her name, hoping it would make her senses come back, but she wasn't listening.

She looked at me like a pawn. Her tongue licked her mouth while she unbuttoned her belt and climbed up to me.

"LISAAA!! LISAA WHATEVER YOU'RE PLANING PLEASE STOP!! PLEASEE!! I BEG YOU!!" I shouted repeatedly, crying louder, screaming, but she didn'teven bother to stop.

Her hands ripped my brassiere, exposing my breast, and fear took my body when I saw how her eyes darkened with lust. Her touches were not the same as before. It was hard, and it pained me on the way she held my body. Her kisses were not as soft when she suck and bit my skin, leaving bruises all over. When I felt her breathing on my centre, I tried to protest that I ended up kicking her face, which made her look at me.

Her anger was shown, then moved closer, and I gasped loudly when she slapped me so hard, again and again, that I could only feel my cheeks numbing due to the pain.

"Lisa," I sob, and cried.

"Stop, stop it, please."

"This isn't you,"

And again, she didn't react.

Her cold hands forcefully took my undies away. Leaving me naked and exposed helplessly in front of her. I was tired, I lost all my energy to fight, and I could only look at her taking her clothes off, revealing her nakedness.

Her wicked smile irked me.

"I hate you." I said, which made her stop and grinned at me.

"No, baby. You love me." That was she said and pushed herself inside me.

Her groaned makes me want to puke. I was disgusted with myself as I watched her use me. My tears fell endlessly, like a river flows down to my cheeks while I sob silently, biting my cheeks to stop the

sound of pain I'm feeling.

I won't make her satisfied.

I will make her regret for treating me this way.

"Fuck!! So tight!!! I bet he's small, isn't he, right baby? It's like you're choking my dick, just like before, yeah?" She even dared to say while she continued on thrusting inside me without consent.

She was the worst.

"Tell me,I'm the best, wasn't I? And that stick boy of yours wasn't giving you any pleasure. "

"Answer me!!" She shouted and slap my face again when I just kept my silence.

I don't know who's the boy she's talking about, but I never have someone aside from her. But of course I didn't tell her that, I wanted her to hate me, she had already taken everything from me, I'm not scared to lose everything.

"In between the two of you. He was better. He was better in everything, Lisa. In fact, you're not even half of how good he is. "

And just like that, she pulled out. Her eyes were blank, and there were no emotions in those eyes while she stopped and stared at me.

Somehow, I felt a sense of regret when I said those to her, but I can't just tell her that she's the only person who I gave myself with.

"You're lying," she mumbled. It was so soft that I almost didn't hear it.

I stood my ground and shook my head.

"Aww," I cried in pain when she moved so fast and flipped my body. I'm lying down on my stomach while she holds my legs tightly, gripping around it, her nails buried on my skin, and I froze when I felt her shaft on the hole that was not expected she would enter.

No.. no.. no...

Not in there

No

"Lisaaa!! Stop it. Stop it, please. I beg you!!" I cried and shouted while I tried to look at her, wanting to lose from her grip, but the again she was stronger.

"No... noplease," I cried so loud

"Ohh baby, don't cry. I promise I'll double the pleasure that he gave you,"

-

I woke up drench with sweats, my cheeks were moist, and quickly got up, as I remembered Lisa forcing her

When I saw her sitting on a chair in front of me. I took hold of the blanket tighter. The nervousness I felt doubles, and it was getting out of hand, especially when she moved closer to me.

"What did you dream of that made you this scared of me?" She asked, and when I smelt the alcohol from her body, I was already shaking in fear and cried for my safety.

"Stay away from me!!" I can't help but shout and move away from her. The pain from my ankle inflicted me, but I can't just bear to be this close around her.

I saw her stop , her hands levelled in her head as a sign that she surrendered. But her eyes, it was different from I dreamt moment ago. This time, she looks hurt and tired.

"You know I could never hurt you. I could even dare to kill myself before I could ever lay my hand on you, Jennie." She said to me, it sounds like she's in so much pain and regret. Somehow, I felt guilty with her words, as I remembered the same thing she meant when dad caught us being together for the first time

Then she took a chair and sat near the bed, ensuring the decent space for me while I rested my back in the headboard, laying on the other edge of the bed.

"I hate to see you, hating me. I don't like what I'm seeing in your eyes when you see me, " she added, smiling slightly and linking her fingers, while she looked straight into my eyes. Her sincerity could be seen on it, but that doesn't mean I can trust her again. I knew this was the reality, but she even had the guts to kidnap me and took me to this island, I just know anything is possible.

"Just go out, Lisa. I don't like being near you. " I coldly told her.

Her eyes reflect pain as she nooded her head. It glimmers and waters while she looks away from me.

"I just wanted to see you asleep. Without the look of hatred for me, without those pain whenever you look at me. Jennie, I miss it, I miss you so much, "

I don't know where her words are coming from, but I couldn't deny that it made my heart soften a bit. But things are just so complicated and different now, and everything is starting to get better, with both of us living away from each other.

"We can't force things, Lis," I just said, and I heard her sighed and nooded her head again, understanding what I meant.

"Do you have someone else?" She asked suddenly, which made me look away from her.

If she's pertaining to V, he and I don't have a relationship yet. But he's courting me, I know he had some bad side, but he was always there when I needed him. He didn't leave me and made his promise to only love me. But I don't feel the same way. I appreciate how he cared, but that's all I could give.

Even so. I nodded my head.

I gripped the sheet tighter when I saw how her eyes watered and tears fell down. My chest tightened the more I stared at her, something in my mind was pushing me to do something.

"I heard you said his name while you sleep. You seem to love him very much. You kept in mubling on how you miss him. On how you miss Leo"

I stopped at the name she said. Somehow, I felt nervous, and my heart was pounding so loud, I felt how my body shivered and suddenly got cold.

"Leo?" I clarified, and Lisa nodded and held my hand gently.

She looked at me like she's ready to let me go. She's holding me like this was the last time she could do it.

"I wanted to meet this man. I saw you with him before. When I first landed in New Zealand at your university. You seem so happy being with him, but I couldn't dare to see how other people could make you happy aside from me. So I decided to take you, and then this happened. " she let out an amused smile and kissed my hand before she slowly let's it go.

I'm confused, I don't get where this is heading. I don't understand.

What the hell is happening!!

She knew who Leo was. I told the maid before. I told her to tell Lisa that we have a son and I named it after her. But why is she acting like she doesn't know a thing.

"I'm happy for you." I held her hand when she was about to stand up. It feels so cold and even shaking while we stare at each other's eyes.

"Jennie, please let go."

I didn't. Instead, I held it tighter.

I want to clarify something I wanted to know, and I wanted to understand what was happening.

"Are you going to let me go?" I asked instead. Somehow, the question that I wanted to answer couldn't even spill out of my mouth. I felt stupid and scared. Somehow, at the back of my mind, I

was frightened of the pain it would cause me when I learned to know her answer.

She took my hand off hers and gently put it back on my lap. She smiled and nodded her head, and I closed my eyes when she held my face and kissed my forehead.

"Tomorrow, you're going to see Leo again." My heart flutters the thought of seeing my son again, making me so much happy and at ease. My joyful appearance didn't go unnoticed as Lisa stared at me before she walked closer towards the door.

"Lisa?" I called, which made her stop while she tried to hide her tears, waiting for me to continue.

"Leo, is your son"

# Chapter 40

You've been asking for an update. Here it is, also an announcement at the bottom, tell me your thoughts about it, otherwise I won't just continue it.

Jennie's POV

I stood up and went closer to Lisa. I held her hand to force her to look at me. Stopping her from going out.

"I don't understand," she said, her eyes filled with confusion, the same way that I do.

She was there, I saw her. I saw her looking at me like I'm no one. While I carried my son on my arms, crying while we waited for Lisa to get out from their house and went to us, to at least give us a chance to prove ourselves that we were her family as well.

"Jennie, please explain everything to me, because I know nothing alright!!" She exclaims, breaking down while she holds both of my hands, straightly looking at me. Her eyes were begging to fill her.

"Please!!!"

"Goddamit, I'm so lost. You don't know how I've been through. I was manipulated by everyone around me. I don't know who to trust Jen, and the moment I remember who you were in my life, you're already gone. You left me. "

"Li- Lisa," I tried to hold her face. My heart ached to how she could be in pain. I saw on how lost she was,on how confused she is right now.

But, how about me? I was hurt as well. All I have was my mother when I'm still pregnant with Leo. My dad was still in jail and was accused of fraud and embezzlement. We suffered emotionally and

financially at those times. We were barely getting by.

And the moment I asked for her before, she just looked at us like we were nothing.

"Just forget what I said," I mumbled and took her hands away from me, and I slowly walked back.

But I was stunned when I felt her hands wrapped around me. She buried her face on my nape while she cried, I even felt how her shoulders shook.

"Baby, please. Give me a chance. I still love you, Jen. God knows how I always thought of you. How much I wanted to see you"

It hurts seeing her like this, begging me to come back to her. But what for? We were living the life without those pain and complications. I know I'm not happy living like this, but how about the people who were actually there for me. I can not be selfish and choose her like the mistake I made before.

"Lisa, listen to me," and I took her hands off from me, facing her properly, and my tears fell when I saw her full-blown crying. She was catching her breath while she looked at me with those pain eyes.

"We can not be selfish. I'm already fine, I'm recovering, and my family is doing well. Let's just focus on what's better for everyone, Lis. I've grown, and in times like this, we should think for others as well. " I tried to explain to her, but she seemed persistent when she shook her head and wiped her tears away kneeling down before me, while she held my hand and kissed it every time.

"Baby, baby. Please, I know, I understand, but we can make everything better. I'm here, I'm already here, and I promise I won't be gone again, and I won't le-"

"PLEASE STOP!! STOP IT ALREADY!!" I shouted, taking my hands away as I held my head and slump down weakly.

I'm losing all my strength, I felt too useless whenever I saw her acting like this. I've lowered myself before, and I can not just be the

same Jennie that can be labelled -

Damn I can't even say it. Because I know I'm more than that, my son and I deserved a family who was proud of having us.

"You've had your chances before Lis, not everyone deserves it,"

---

It was already morning, I woke up with swollen eyes and my ankle was a little bit better than yesterday. It was already 5, and I slowly walked myself outside after I freshened myself.

I looked at Lisa around the huge house, but I couldn't seem to find her. I tried calling her, but still, I didn't even hear a faint sound. I started to get worried for her that I ended up walking my way out of the door. The sun was about to set up, and there I saw her walking to the deepest part of the sea, not minding the cold while she wore her black Adidas brassiere. I was relieved at first, but then I saw cans of beers on the sand, making me realise that she's drunk.

My heart pounded against my chest while I hastily walked. I somehow can't feel the pain from my ankle because of the worriedness I have for her.

"Lisa!!," I cried out for her name, calling her nonstop, but she seemed to be so lost when she didn't even look at me.

"Lisa, stop!!" I tried again, and relief washed over me when she did. Her eyes widened when she saw that I'm already swimming my way towards her.

"What are you doing?" She asked when I finally arrived to where she was. I glared and slapped her arms for her stupid question.

"Do you want to die?!!" I furiously asked, but she only smiled and shooked her head, smirking at me.

"You look worried, Jen,"

"Of course I am. I know how that brain of yours works!!" I shouted, which she acted like her ear was hurting.

I gapped my mouth and looked at her unbelievably, feeling insulted to what she's acting. I was about to swim back to the shore when she held my arm and forced me to look back at her.

"I'm just kidding," she explained, but I only rolled my eyes and took her hands away from me.

"Let's just go back." I said, already shivering.

She looked at me worriedly, and just before I could react, I felt her warm hand hugged me from my waist, her right hand was settled on my nape, forcing me to buried my face on her neck.

I felt my world stop, but I could feel how my heart skipped a beat. Then it started to beat so fast, and it was already pounding against my chest, causing chaos.

Together with mine, I also felt and heard her own heart . It wasn't different from how I felt and in a short moment. My hands moved on their own as I hugged her back as tightly as I could. My eyes closed gently as I rested my head against her chest.

-

"Beer?" I declined her offer and just sited myself on the sand while we watched the sunrise together.

It was peaceful. The sound of the waves and the birds chirping in an early morning made me calm.

It was cutted short when I heard Lisa open a can of beer for herself. I look at her with my brows creasing, but she only just wink at me with a smirk plastered on her face.

"Here," she said and threw a blanket on my face, I groaned, and just as I took it off from me. Lisa's face was just a few inches from my mine.

"You're so beautiful." she said, and her smile showed up.

My heart starts to beat loudly again. My stomach was already flipping, I felt giddy all of a sudden that I couldn't seem to control

it, and just as I was about to look away from her, she had already held my face and this time.

I'm already looking at her red pouty lips.

I felt myself blushing, my cheeks heated for some reason, and the more I continued to stare at it.

"Jennie,"

"Yeah?" I answered

"Can I kiss you?" I felt myself froze, stunned, confused.

I looked back at her with bilweredement. I don't know what to answer, I don't know what to say.

She's confusing me.

What is this.

Why is she acting like this.

It's like she's putting me on a trap, and I'm slowly enjoying myself.

"I- " my breath hitch when she moved closer, our nose touches, and our lips,.was just centimetres apart.

I'm blank to what i supposed to do.

I'm stunned until I felt myself nodding my head.

I close my eyes, waiting for her lips to touch mine, but then memories of my sufferings hunted me. Somehow, my subconsciousness was telling me that this was wrong, and I'm starting to feel guilty for the people who stayed beside me when Lisa took and left me with nothing

I stood up and walked hastily away from her, but before I could take more steps, she had already held my face and kissed me.

She kissed me so gently, but the longing was there, I felt how her kissed expressed how much she missed me, on how much she

wanted me.

Because I felt it too

I miss her. Every day

In fact, there's no time that I didn't even think of her.

It's so hard, I'm confused, troubled even.

What Lisa is doing is making it harder for both of us. I already made a distance for us to grow apart from each other but with all this stunt and actions from her. She's making me lose myself again.

We're done

We're supposed to be free from each others lives, but why am I kissing her back.

Why am I holding her like I'm afraid she'll leave me and this moment we won't see each other again.

"Marry me." I looked at her confusedly. My eyes widened with her statement, and my heart was nervously wreaking against my chest.

I'm confused. How could she have the courage to ask me that.

"How about Rosie? Chelsea? What about them, Lis? That's your family. "

She smiled slightly, somehow I saw pain in her eyes and I just knew something unfortunate happened.

We were sitting back to where her beer was, and this time, I managed to stop her from drinking, and I settled in between her legs. My back was resting against her chest while she hugged me comfortably.

"I stayed with Chaeng at those times. She was filling me into the things I didn't remember, and I trusted her. She told me about Chelsea's condition, and I've never felt broken when I learned how severe it was. We tried all the possible procedures, but we couldn't

still bear another child. "

I felt a pain in my chest. Of course, sleeping with her wife was with that possible procedure that she meant. But I need to open my mind about it, Lisa don't remember a thing about me, and it was for the sake of their daughter.

I urged her to continue and kiss her hands that's I'm holding. I felt Lisa nuzzled closer in my head and kissed it.

"You're a little salty," she commented, which made me laugh and playfully smack her arm. Then she sighed loudly before she continued.

"Chealse was getting worse, and we were about to lose hope at that time, but then I heard Rosie speaking to a familiar man, I knew him to be her friend and as I was about to approach them I heard him demanding the right for his daughter, I was confused at first but when Chealse's name was mention, right there I confronted both of them"

I was confused at what Lisa meant, so I moved a little to properly look at her, and there I saw the pain in her eyes again.

"Chealse wasn't mine. Back then, something happened with Rosé and her friend,"

I gasped loudly

"Oh God." I can't help to mumble, and my eyes were already in tears as I continued to stare at Lisa's face.

She smiled at me, that kind of smile that you could see the person was faking it. I can see right through her eyes how the betrayal hurt her.

I kiss her forehead and urge her to cry. I know she's just hiding it, I know she's in pain, I know she's angry.

"I'm sorry you have to experience all of that," I said to her, sympathising with what she's feeling.

"You've done nothing wrong, baby. In fact, I felt sorry for what you've been through. " I looked at her, confused about what she meant.

Lisa held my face.

"I continued to be Chealse's parent figure because even if she's not mine, she's still my daughter for me. I supported them for all I could give, but of course, I distance myself from Rosé. Then I'm back to my old self, alcoholic and in a drug addiction. " I worriedly looked at her while she's telling me her story. I wanted her to stop because I could feel her about to snap and break down.

"Then at that moment I gradually remembered you. That there's someone that I'm holding, I'm missing, I just keep on dreaming and thinking of you Jennie, until Jisoo told me everything. Just then, I realised that my family, my friends, and everyone lied to me. They crop you out from my memories. "

I stared at Lisa without knowing what to do. At this moment, we were both in pain, catching up to what had happened to both of us after those years.

"I tried looking for you Jen, after I remembered and knew who you are, I felt complete. I travelled the world to look for you, I hired someone to help me find you, and finally, baby, I did after those painful years, " she cried and wiped the tears from my eyes.

"I went back for you too." I can't help but mumble. Her eyes look at me confusedly but urging me to go on.

"I went to your house back in SoKor, I asked the maid to tell you about me but then when she came back you throw us out" I said painfully, my tears fell down endlessly while I thought about it.

Lisa made a confused look. Her eyes were blank, and then she started to stand and grabbed the empty glass of bourbon next to her, and she started to shout.

"Fuck!! Fucking hell!!!"

"I hate her, fuck! I hate her so much!!!"

I immediately held her waist and carress her her back. I hugged her tightly, whispering gently words for her.

"Baby" I said and we both cried for what have happened to both of us.

"It was you, I saw you carrying a child while walking out of the house. I'm sorry, I didn't know, baby. Chaeng did this, she played us! She!! Fuck!! She told me you're just no one, just someone asking for directions and I didn't payed mind of it, if I only knew, If I --"

"Damn!! Damn you Chaeng!!

"Shhh, baby. Lis, its alright I'm here, it happened we can't to anything about it" I tried to console her and fortunately she calm down a bit but still she ended up crying again.

I can't really blame her, what Rosé did what unforgivable, she lied to Lisa, played with her feelings. She's just the worst to the point that she even made me hate Lisa as well.

"Was it Leo? The child you're carrying is our son, isn't Jen?" I knew that she'll eventually asked that question, but still, I was taken aback.

"Please, answer me, baby. I heard you clearly last night. There's no way you could deny what you said, " she begged me, and now she's holding my face, forcing me to look at her straight in the eyes.

And this time, I nodded my head. Apparently, all my efforts of holding back my feelings for her just backfired me.

We were both in pain. We struggled differently, but still, we both sought each others warmth.

I miss her, and I wanted Lisa for all to myself.

"I love you, Lis. I still love you, in fact. I've been in love with you every time. And I'm sure Leo would be happy to meet and know you. " I stop and look at her apologetically

"But I don't think I can marry you, Lis,"

I saw her eyes narrowed until it changed to confusement, and then it glistened. Her smirk appeared, and then she held me tightly.

"I'm sure Leo would love to have a complete family with me in it. Now that I know that you still love me, I don't think I can take no as an answer, baby."

---

Unholy is about to end. Thank you all for reading and waiting.

And

I'm planning on making another one.

Prof x Student Jenlisa AU

# Chapter 41 (M)

Fluff for

❣

Jennie's POV

"What is he like?" Lisa asked while preparing the foods on the table. We cooked seafood for breakfast after Lisa caught fresh fish and crabs near the rocky shore. I'm lying if I'm not amused to what she did.

"Well, he was very sweet and clingy," I answered while wiping her sweats away with my hands, kissing her cheeks after which made Lisa smile and hold my face.

"Just like me?" She said in aegyo. It was so cute that I ended up looking away, but she seemed persistent and pecked my lips while she pouted and waited for me to answer.

It's been a long time since I felt this again. This pounding against my chest that sends butterflies into my stomach and the happiness that I couldn't compare with anything.

I didn't answer her, and instead, I just wrapped my arms around her waist, hugging her tightly, smelling her scent, feeling her warmth, and I just lay my head on her chest.

"Lisa"

"Hmmm?"

"I love you,"

I felt her stop until I smiled when I heard how her heart was madly beating, and I teasingly smiled at her when she cough and her cheeks blushed.

"Did I make Doctor Manoban blushed?" I added, which made her roll her eyes playfully and pull a chair for me.

I didn't worsen her agony and just sit, but the tables turned when she bit my ear and whispered.

"Your love is making me hard,"

"Damn you!!"

---

Through the meal, Lisa took good care of me. She wipes my mouth, feeds me, opens the crabs for me, takes the fish bones off, and even makes coffee for me.

"Becareful, or I might get used to this"

She smiled and pecks my lips before she sincerely  looked into my eyes. Her hand held my chin.

"I've been dreaming of this moment to do this to you. To take care of you and give the world to you, " she said, and I could sighed and close my eyes because of her words.

"I'm still scared, Lis. All of this is happening too fast, and I- " I cried and held her hand.

"Things could change too, just like before. We weren't expecting of those to happened and yet, look at what we've been through, " I added

Lisa looked at me apologetically,  her eyes pained for me, for us. We've been hurt so much, and I'm scared that this happiness will just vanish as easily as before.

"I'm sorry. I know it's because of me, and the complications drag you into this. I never meant to this to happen, Jennie. You don't deserve all that pain, those suffering. However, now that I'm here, I won't let anything bad ever happen to you and to Leo. This time, I won't be gone ever. It's a promise, " she said. Her eyes watered and full of sincerity, and at this moment, all I could do was trust her

again.

"I love you so much Jennie, even though I couldn't remember who you are before, my heart long for you. It seeks your warmth and this beautiful smile of yours, " she sweetly added , and I ended up blushing again and looking away because of her words.

"We will fight everything, right? You won't be gone, Lisa, and no more forgetting who I was because this time I won't run away. I will force myself towards you to make you choose me. I will be selfish this time. " she smiled at me, her white teeth showing up and pecking my lips again  and again until we just kissed passionately.

A sweet and full longing type of kiss, so soft and gentle and so warm that I could melt at any second.

--

"They couldn't come here until 5. What do you want to do?" She asked while we sited on the swing on the porch.

"Nothing, I just want to enjoy this moment, but it's much better if our son was here with us." Lisa smiled apologetically at me and softly kissed my head.

"I'm sorry that I ended up imprisoning you here instead of just talking to you. We should have enjoyed and have our time with Leo,"

I looked at Lisa and took her hand, kissing it gently before I looked at her. "There's so much time for that, and God loves you as much as I do. Maybe he just gives us this moment so we can talk about everything properly. "

Lisa smiled at me amusedly. Until in turned into a grin, and teasingly stared at me

"What?" I asked

"When we go back. I want us to get married in front of God, and I will hold your hand in front of him as I thank him for letting us cross our paths. I will sincerely vow to honour you, to love you, to

take care of you, and to stay with you forever, together with our little Jennie's"

Her words melted my heart. The sincerity makes my chest swell in such a beautiful way. It's causing havoc and chaos that drums to my whole being. The happiness was overflowing that I ended up kissing her while my tears fell from my eyes.

Her soft lips that I missed so much made my mind go crazy. My smile broke as we kissed in so much love. I wouldn't trade anything for this, this happenings, this beautiful being that I'm so in love with.

"Carry me to our room." I said, and I saw how Lisa's eyes filled with desire, how her pupils constrict, and I felt how her breath hitch.

I wrapped my legs around her waist, my hands encircled her nape while we kissed passionately, her tongue invaded my mouth, and I willingly opened it up for her. We kissed in such gentleness, but the desire fueled in full pleasure.

"Shit!" I smiled when I heard her swear. I'm already kissing her jaw down to her nape, licking it gently and leaving soft bites into it, and just before I could put a mark. I didn't notice that Lisa had already put me down  on the couch.

"To our roo-" I was cutted off by her kisses when I was supposed to protest, I slap her arm when I felt her smile in between our moments.

Lisa reached for the hem of my shirt, tugging it gently, which made me pull my arm up and help her undress me. Her eyes immediately filled with so much desire and lust, not even taking her eyes off for a second before she unhooked my brassiere, and I blushed when she saw my bare chest.

"Such a beauty," she commented, and I was about to reprimand her teasing when she suck my neck and poured soft and gentle kisses around it. Her hand travels to my back down to my waist, and I close my eyes at the sensation she's making me feel.

"Lisaaa." I moaned her name, and I grabbed her hair when her breathing touched my breast. My nipple hardened at the sensation, while my heart was pounding excitedly.

We were both catching our breath, moaning in such desires.

"Su-suck it more," I boldly told her, which she did, and made my body ark when she encircled her tongue around my areola and gently bit my nipple and her other hand fondle my right breast.

Her touches were so soft, her kisses were very gentle. It's making me lose my mind, it making me crazy. She's just so good at what she's doing that I ended up pulling her head back and kissing her with such eagerness.

This time, I was the one who inserted my tongue on her mouth, and I heard her grunt when I suck hers, and my hands went to her shirt and took it off, and we kiss passionately again.

We were losing our breath, but we couldn't care more. We missed each other so much that I couldn't bear to take my hands off from her.

"Fuck!!" She cursed and just before I could react Lisa already manage to rest my back on the couch and already tugging my shorts off

I smiled at her eagerness, my chest pounded excitedly while waiting for her next move.

"You're dripping baby," she boldly commented, and instead of getting shy. I just spread my legs for her, holding her head to push her down to my centre while our eyes locked with such fiery gazes.

Lisa's hand went to my legs, moving it that it ended up resting on her shoulders. Her head is in between it, putting kisses on my inner tights,leaving marks, and biting it gently, which made me flinch and moan loudly.

"Ba-babyyy,"

"Yes! Ju- just like that. "

"Oh, how I missed this," I moved my hand over her head and grasped on her hair. My eyes closed because of the familiar feeling, and lust already took over my body.

I felt her tongue teases my clit, licking my fold and inserting it on my hole that I ended up squirming and calling her name again and again.

I was breathless literally, my head moved side to side, my mouth parted open while my legs pushed her more towards my sensitive pussy.

"Suck it!! Suck it more, Lisaaa. " I told her, and I ended up biting my lips when I felt my orgasm getting closer, my tights locked tightly on her head.

My legs tense, my eyes closed, my breathing stopped, and I could only flinch and hold her hair tightly.

"Ohhhhhhh shiiiiiitttt," I screamed when I reached the euphoric feeling.  I don't know where to put my hand that I ended up scratching her neck, and it still didn't work out that I just grasp my own hair tightly and moved my hips to met her sinful yet talented mouth.

"Ohh baby! Baby!" I kept shouting and moaning while she prolonged my orgasm.

I sighed when Lisa gently took my legs off of her shoulder. I tried to look at what she was doing, but I was too tired to even open my eyes.

"As always, you taste so good, baby," I blushed at what she said, which made Lisa giggle and peck my lips before she gently turned me around.

I'm kneeling on the couch while I felt Lisa's hard shaft behind me. Her hands are tightly holding my waist while she puts kisses allover my skin.

"I miss you so much, baby and I love you so much. I can't wait to marry you and lived together happily with our own family" She

whispered sweetly. I held her head behind me, and I shivers when I felt her bit my ear and licked it sensually.

I moaned at her gesture and pushed myself closer to her harden shaft. As always, my heart was pounding excitedly, my mind loses its sanity and my stomach was flipping with all those butterflies inside it.

"You own my heart baby. You own every inch of me" Lisa kiss my nape first until I moaned out loud when her shaft slowly entering my tight hole.

It's been so long since, and with her big and proud manhood I felt my cunt stretching apart.

"Fucking hell!! It's so tight!!" I heard Lisa grunted before she started to move slowly and gently. Her hands carress my skin up to my breast as she fondled it with her big warm hands.

Our sweat covered our body, both our body fluids glistened while I watched it down to my legs. I felt myself blushing again as the pleasure succumb my body.

It's been so long, and lonely for all those years and now that Lisa and I done it again I'm so sensitive. Even her just being breathless like I am turned me on so much. My mind loses my senses and pushed my hips back towards her manhood. My eyes closed on how tight it was that I felt it sliding into my walls, the sound of fleash thrusting heated up my body more.

Moans, groans and loud sighed filled the innocent room. My eyes rolled into such pleasure while I unconsciously traveled my hand to my clit and rubs myself.

Lisa saw what I did and I blushed harder when she whispered how hot I was and how a pervert that I'm becoming.

I didn't mind her teases and just found her mouth that was near my ear and kiss her hungrily. Her tongue shove down to my throat that our saliva mixes together. Our moans filled our mouths, sucking both our breathes literally.

"I'm c-cumming" I told her which made her smile and thrusted hard, deep and rapidly behind me. I couldn't even kiss her back even if I wanted to, I've become so weak that I ended up shoving my head to the couch while my saliva drools down to my mouth,  moaning so loud.

"You'll be the death of me baby" I managed to hear what Lisa said and held both of my arms behind me while she continue to pound harder and harder.

"OHHHHHH FUCKKKKKKK!! SHITTTTT!!"

"SHIT!"

"SHIT!"

"SHIT LISAAAAA! I'M CUMMING SOOO HAAARD!!"

I shouted and cried the intense feeling of my orgasm. I lost myself to the pleasure, my sanity vanish, my breathing stop as I enjoyed myself getting fuck from behind while I'm helplessly held by my lover.

I look at her weakly when she pulled away, her hands gently held my waist and turned to face her again. My back was on the armrest of the couch and she look at me with her eyes filled with so much lust.

"I love you" I said to her which Lisa smiled and exposed myself by spreading my legs and I gasp my mouth open when this position directly hit my soft spot.

"Lisa shit! Shit! This feels so good!!

She smirked and kissed me again. Sucking my breathes away and thrusted herself again with such eagerness. Her eyes look into mine and whispered how much she love me, on how crazy she is for me.

And even weak and already tired I wrap my legs around her and move my hips. My hand held her face  as we kissed again and again until I felt her legs tense and her breath hitch, which made my another orgasm closer.

"Cumming" she said and I nodded my head and buried her face in my neck.

My eyes rolled at the feeling of my orgasm reaching again. I kept on scratching Lisa's back as I cried on how good it felt, on how she can make me go insane with her moves and touches.

"Again! I'm ha ohhhh lisaaa baby, I'm cumming again" I weakly whispered on her ears.

"Ohhhhh"

"SO SO SO HAAAAAARDD!!" I cried out and squirm when I felt her warm seed planted into me, both our orgasm reach at a perfect timing. She was moaning and grunting while still thrusting, prolonging our orgasm together.

---

We were both ready and just waiting for the helicopter that will fetch us, as what Lisa said. The sun was about to rest which we haven't notice if we didn't accidently look at the clock. Honestly speaking if it didn't happened we were both still making up to time we haven't been together.

"I can't wait to meet the little version of you," she mumbled against my ear. I close my eyes at the warmth her body gave me. She was behind my back while her hands were around my waist.

I held her cheeks and looked at her side and kissed her lips before I look the at peaceful ocean in front of us.

"It's kinda little version of you, Lis,"

Lisa looked at me. Her eyes were wide as if waiting for me to take back what I said, and I just giggled at her cuteness.

"It's true. He just looks like you, from your eyes down to your lips. The literal mini version of his dada, " I added, and Lisa grinned and excitedly laugh.

"I think it's our ride." We both looked at the helicopter above us,

and Lisa immediately covered my eyes to protect it from the sand.

But when my heart pounded nervously when i felt her body froze and I quickly took her hand away. But all I could see was Taehyung holding my son hostage with a mischievous smirk plastered on his lips, and his eyes were in rage while she stared at Lisa and me.

# END

Jennie's POV

"L-leo, that's Leo Lis," I cried

I badly want to run and take my son off from that monster, but Lisa was holding me tightly. I could also feel her shaking. Both our hands feel so cold, my mind couldn't focus, and my chest was just beating so loud that it's churning my stomach.

"No, not my son Tae," I told him while he walked closer towards us. Lots of men were surrounding the place, and from the looks of it, none of it was Lisa's.

Tae only smirks until he laughs and puts the gun closer to my sons head, which made me cry and kneel before him. The sound of my son crying hurts me. It feels like a needle was stabbing my heart endlessly.

I'm his mother, but I was the reason why his suffering like this.

"W-we can still talk about this. Put the gun down, man. Tell me what you want and I'll give it to you. " I heard Lisa say, walking closer towards Taehyung, her hands were up like she's surrendering.

I look at Lisa, hoping that she'll have a plan to save our son.

"Fucking hell Jennie, you're still not over this bitch? She already left you, and now you've spread your legs again for her?"

I felt Lisa raging. I know how her temper works, she give no patience when people talk badly about me.

But one thing we needed to do was to not provoke Tae, and he could possibly hurt our son.

Lisa gripped her fist tightly, mumbling curse words before she

sighed and looked at me. Her eyes were apologising before she walked closer, trying to save Leo

"Look, man, you can take me, I know you're only mad at me. Just please, not my son. He has done nothing wrong. "

"Please, Tae, let go of him," I beg as well. My hands clap together while my tears fall nonstop. I'm crying so hard that I'm about to lose my breath. Panic consumes me, and my anxiety is not helping as well.

I froze when he laughed, his eyes were cunning, his smiles irked me while he looked into my body, licking her mouth before he pushed my son on the ground, and my eyes went wide when I heard a loud bang coming from his gun.

I wasn't able to move. My eyes widened when I saw blood coming from my sons head. My ear rang, and my heart dropped

"Oh my god, oh my god." I kept mumbling while I crawl and run to my sons body, shaking it harder to wake him up, but I couldn't hear a thing from him.

"No, no baby, please wake up. Leo!!" I shouted while I held his head, and my heart broke into pieces when a lot of blood poured out.

"It's all my fault, I'm so stupid, fuck!!" Lisa shouted while she run and gently took Leon from me.

I watched her tear her shirt and tried to cover our sons head. Her tears fell nonstop, wheeping while she held him. Her hands were shaking while trying to save our son.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry, dada is sorry, baby. I'm sorry we met too late, I'm sorry I didn't recognise you before, I'm sorry, I'm sorry for everything now please. Leo, wake up!! Dada's here. Please!! " it hurts

It hurts so much seeing Lisa cry, apologising to the situation we both didn't have hold into.

We were both victims of this situation. We were manipulated by everyone around us, we were played, and now we were both suffering from the loss of our child.

"Save him 'man' you're a doctor, aren't you? Come on!!" Lisa stopped when Tae talked. I saw her hands form a fist, gripping it tightly, and her tears fell after the other.

I know she's about to burst, I know she wanted to kill him like I do, but she couldn't do it because I was with her and we couldn't fight with all Taehyung's men surrounding us.

I'm helpless. The same helpless Jennie that's been a burden for everyone.

"Lisa," I called her name.

She looked at me, gone with her glaring eyes, and instead, her soft gentle eyes stared at me apologetically.

"I'm so sorry," she cried as she went closer with our son on her arms.

My hands were shaking as I held Leo's body while we mourned for the loss of our son.

Leo didn't deserve this, and so was Lisa

Why does something like this always happen? We just wanted to be happy

I know we weren't good people and shared lots of sins and flaws, but why can't we just deserve a life that everyone craves for?

"One down and you're next." My heart literally dropped when Tae put a gun on Lisa's head.

I slowly moved my head up, and I shivered when he smirked at me before the sound of gunshot spread across the place.

Lisa was gone

"Lisa"

"Ba-baby"

"Don't you dare leave me too!!"

I cried while I hugged both of their bodies. I shouted my pain and curses to this damn psycho who was just laughing at me.

His smiles hunted me.

"Wake up, Jen."

"Jennie?

"Sweetie"

I groaned as I tried to cover my eyes. My mother gave me a glass of water, which I took and hastily drank it

"Are you alright?" She asked and tried to tuck my hair.

I just sighed and nodded my head.

Memories from before made my body shiver and cause pain on my chest again.

"You need to get ready, or you're going to be late,"

I took a bath and dressed myself. I slowly went out the door, and lots of people were smiling to see me.

"I thought you're not going to get out of that room. I was already planning to break it. " I laugh at Irene's words and just hug her tightly.

"Thank you for flying over for me. I know you're still tired from the flight. "

Irene smiled and just tapped my back. Her eyes were in tears and held my hand.

"It's been so long since we talked. You were suddenly gone, and

cutted off any means of communication. I'm still mad, you know."

My smile broke off. Guilty of what she said.

"I already apologise about it. Come on, " I laugh and slightly nudge her shoulder.

"Oh right, how's you and Seulgi?" Irene stops and forces a smile at me.

"We didn't really work it off." I stopped and held her hand.

I look at her properly, wanting to know what happened.

"You know I wanted to have kids, right? Seulgi and I are both women, and we couldn't really have the means to make it possible."

My heart ached at what Irene said to me. Her tears fell from her eyes, and she immediately wiped it off, but it still continued to fall.

"I'm sorry, Irene." I apologise for being so insensitive. If I didn't ask her that question, she wouldn't be crying like this.

"It's alright." she smiled and rolled her eyes, and I knew there's more coming.

"And it's not even my decision to break up Jennie. It was hers, that fucking stupid bitch made a decision for our relationship" and here it is.

I listen to her ranting about Seulgi. On how fake she was because Irene saw her being with someone else on her apartment the day after the two of them broke up. She was about to give their relationship a chance, and if they wanted a child soon, they could adopt or do IVF. She was so in love with Seulgi, but I guess pain made Irene hate Seulgi this much. That's all I've been hearing curses and insults.

I wonder what she will be she doing if she sees the person she hates the most later.

"I've been blabbing so much," she noticed herself and smiled at me

like there's nothing wrong.

"You talked so much, and there's no room left for me to say anything," I just say, which made us laugh, and she just hugged me suddenly

"Seriously, Jennie, I'm so happy to see you again, and I'm sorry about what happened." I looked away and just nodded my head at her.

I heard her sighed and hug my arm.

I really don't wanna talk about it.

"Now let me help you ready for the funeral."

What she said slaps me on the reality. Of course, that's the reason why she's here and why I'm here.

I just held my chest to soothe it down. It's been beating hard again to the point that it could make me pass out.

---

"Why do ceremonies like this  wear white? I mean, black could be an option, too, right?" Sana said out of nowhere while I sighed and took a large amount of breath.

I'm nervous and scared

"You can wear black at a funeral," I just replied and rubbed my hand altogether, to stop it from shaking and feeling cold.

"Well, this is a funeral," Irene immediately commented, and the two laugh happily together.

I just rolled my eyes at them. How could they mock me and my agony.

"Ohh, come on, Jennie, try to give us a chance. We're both single and heartbroken, that's why, " Irene said and told my hairdresser to hurry it up.

"Yeah, now that you're going to marry my crush, my  baby, damn Dr. Manoban, how could she choose a lawyer over me?" Sana said dramatically, which made my makeup artist and hairdresser laugh, and I can't seem to hide my smile as well.

Yes, Lisa and I are getting married. What happened back on the island was just a nightmare. I got traumatised about what happened that Lisa made a crucial investigation about Taehyung, and that's when we knew that all the unfortunate happenings about my dad and our family was the cause of Taehyungs dad He blamed my father for all the things that they were illegally doing, and Tae was very much aware of it. I was mad at him, to the point that I asked Lisa for help to get their family what they deserved, and that caused my dad to be killed, the bullet was supposed to be meant for Lisa because Tae found out that she was the reason that his father locked in jail but dad got in the way and save my girlfriend. He told me to be happy with who I love, and Lisa and I deserve the happiness that we had long for a very long time.

For a year Lisa has always been there for me and Leo, she supported and gives all her time for us, especially to our son who seems so distant when it comes to her and my heart melted on how soft and understanding she was until they got so close that it looks like my son almost forget about me.

I continued studying my degree, and Lisa helped a lot even with our different paths of career and just a month ago, I had my degree and that's when Lisa proposed to me properly and we planned this wedding for a month.

"I need to make you mine legally as soon as possible. I waited long enough. " That's what she said to me every time I talk on how things are happening so fast.

"It's a very simple answer, Sana, because our bride here is drop-dead gorgeous. I mean, look at her. Isn't she breathtaking? Just like me. "

"Yeah, you're pretty, but your heart still got broken. What's her name again? Seu-ji?"

"It's Seulgi miss." we both look at the person who just came into my dressing room, already dressed in a lady suit.

I saw how Irene stopped and glared at Sana, who was just smiling apologetically and even gestured her sorry.

"Come in Seulgi," I told her, which she did, and I smiled when she handed me a box graven with the luxurious brand.

"She told me to tell you to hurry up. She can't wait to make you her official wife, " she said and wishes me Goodluck and kisses my cheek.

"See you later, ladies, and of course Irene," she added, and my eyes widened when Sana slapped Irene's arm so hard and squell loudly that even my dressers covered their ears.

I just shook my head and looked at the box Lisa gave me. It comes with a letter and a beautiful infinity bracelet with a ruby in both circles while the side is filled with small diamonds.

It looks so elegant and very expensive.

Irene helped me put the bracelet on me while I took the letter and read it loudly.

*To my wife*

*I couldn't sleep well last night. I kept wondering how this day would come. I know we work and prepare so hard for this, and I wanted it to go like we wished it to be.*

*Finally, any moment from now, you'll be having my last name, and everyone will know that you're mine and always will be.*

*We've been through a lot, baby, and we fought against it. Thank you for giving me a chance, and thank you for letting me in your life. I don't know where could I've been with you if it weren't for you. I love you. You hold my life and soul together with our son and our coming baby. Thank you for giving me a family that I dreamed of. You're my happiness, my beautiful morning afternoon and night. I*

*love*

*you, and thank you for*

*loving*

me and choosing me.

"Wow." I felt my tears fall from my eyes as I read her letter. Her words struck me like lightning which made the butterflies in my stomach gone wild.

-

"What's the name of the baby?" The nurses ask while I look at Lisa, who was carefully carrying our newborn.

"You can ask my wife about it. It's a girl so she can get to pick. " I told the nurse, and Lisa giggled and walked closer to me.

I smiled at how gentle she was, and she even gestured her hand to keep quiet and smiled widely at me.

God, she's so cute.

Lisa kissed my forehead before she faced the nurse, who was also fondly looking at us.

"I've been dreaming all the time for this," Lisa said and held my hand, our gazed locked together.

"Ruby Elise Jane Kim Manoban"

My eyes went wide.

"Really?" I asked, and I tried to get up from my bed, but she immediately stopped me and stole a kiss from my lips.

"Yes baby, isn't it cute?" She proudly said and showered my face with kisses.

"Thank you, thank you so much for carrying and giving me babies. I know how hard your pregnancy journey was. You're so strong,

baby. I love you so much, " she mumbled happily, that I just gasped for air and looked at the nurse embarrassed by how my wife was acting.

I'm admitted at Lisa's own hospital, so basically, all the staff around here knew her, and also me as Lisa's wife. She's known to be very cold and strict, but now she seems not to give a damn with the people in our room just to show me how happy she was.

"I think that's all ma'am, Dr. Manoban, " and all of them went out, and still Lisa couldn't get over the fact as she still keeps on taking a picture of me and our baby Ruby in my arms while I'm breastfeeding her.

"I bet Leo will be jealous of this," She said while she looked at the pictures of her phone.

Well Lisa and Leo have a love and hate relationship. They would tease each other every time they get a chance, and I would always act a a referee for them to stop.

"Stop it, baby, he already felt bad when he can't come in here and see his little sister." I tried to say, but Lisa only stuck her tongue out and laugh when she let me see how she pressed the send button.

"Well, he needs to grow fast and protect our little angel. I will train our son and teach him how to kick ass if anyone tried to be with our baby. "

"You're going make lot of boys and girls cry, wouldn't you?"

"She's not even a month old Lisa. What are you saying?" I just laugh at what she's acting and shake my head.

"Well, time flies so fast now, baby. Even you, your dad, almost killed me when I'm trying my best to get under your pants, and you're already eighteen at the time, " and now my cheeks heated as I remembered how it was before.

"Oh, stop it!" I said and pinches her cheek, which she just crunched her nose and pouted.

Jisoos, why is she so adorable and beautiful and handsome.

"Our little Ruby looks like you. I bet she's going to be feisty like her mother, " she said, and she put her finger around our daugthers' hands, and my heart melted when Ruby grasped it tightly and a small smile express on her little face.

"I love you, Lisa. I love you so much and our little babies, " I whispered on her ear, which made her look at me, and her eyes watered while smiling widely.

"Thanks God for giving you three to me. I promise to give you all that I have. I love you so much, with all my whole being"

-

I was shopping for groceries when someone familiar was slowly walking towards me. I was about to panic and run off, but he already held my arm and took out an ID and let me see it.

"You're Lisa's dad?" I asked, and he smiled slightly. It's clear to see that he was contemplating to approach me, but I think it's time to solve the issues of the past.

"I was thinking of inviting your dad this Christmas." I studied Lisa's face. She stops massaging my foot and looks at me confusedly.

"You met him?" I nodded and pulled her hand to sit next to me on the couch.

Leo was playing with his toys while Ruby was sleeping in the crib. It was already 7, and it's our family time. We always watch a movie or do things as a family to keep our bond together, especially Leo is growing up so fast.

"Leo baby, why don't you take a bath first before we watch a movie?" Lisa said and kissed Leo's head, and he ran to me to ask for kisses too.

"As I was say-"

"No." I stopped when Lisa disagreed. I sighed and took her hand and

kissed the back of it before I pouted and looked at her.

"Baby, give your dad a chance. I know he made a mistake, but he's still your dad. You still care for him. " I persuaded her, but when she still didn't make a sound, I straddled myself on her lap and put my arms around her nape.

She was frozen at first, but eventually, she put her hands on my waist, making sure that I'm comfortable.

I smiled at her and kissed her cheeks.

"It's time to forgive, baby. Everyone can make  mistakes, and what we need to do it accept and move on."

Lisa sighed and took a deep breath, and slowly nodded her head. I smiled and looked at her with amazement .

"Really?" I clarified, and again, she nodded and acted like it's not a big deal.

"You're so cute. I love you so much, " I told her, and her smirk appeared, and I shut my mouth when she kissed me hungrily.

The grip on my waist tightened as our lips moved in sync. We kiss tenderly and passionately while I massage her nape and deepen the kiss as I open my mouth and my wife immediately suck my tongue out.

"Shit!" She mumbled, her kisses went to my neck licking it down towards my collarbone, leaving marks before she kissed me again.

"I think there's no movie night happening," I said, which made her smirk and when she's about to carry me up our room. Our little angel cries loudly.

"Not again," Lisa said, and I laughed as I took Ruby on my arms.

---

"Merry Christmas, baby," Lisa greeted while we walked our way out of the church. Our daughter was sleeping while sucking a baby

bottle on my arms. While Lisa, on the other hand, is carrying Leo, who was pinching Lisa's cheek.

He's making fun of his dada again.

"Are you still hanging there?" I giggled when she's already hurting, but she still didn't reprimand our son about it.

She laughed and put Leo down and just held his hand as we continued our way out.

"Lisa," we stopped when we heard someone call my wife, and my brows furrowed when I saw Rosé walking towards us.

It's been so long since we met, and this was the first time that we saw each other again.

Lisa looked at me, asking permission to talk to her ex lover, and I just nodded my head and was about to take Leo and walk off, but Lisa had already stopped me.

"We can talk while you're here," she said, and I nooded my head because that's what I wanted to. I need to guard what's mine.

"It's been so long, Jennie." I smiled at Chaeng

"How's Chealse? I heard about what happened. "

Rosie smiled and waved a hi to Leo before she answered me.

"She's doing better. Eun woo and I fortunately found a way, and she's recovering now and with our twins"

My eyes went wide as a mention of her twins. Maybe she noticed it when she laughed slightly.

"I know, but yeah, God works in mysterious ways."

I nodded my head in agreement as I looked at my angels beside me. I wasn't dreaming of having a family like this, and to have a lover who loves me the most, but here I am now. I'm so happy and filled with love every day.

"Actually, I'm here to apologise for all of you. Especially to you, Jennie. I know I was a bitch and I'm so sorry for everything I did." She said sincerely.

I look at her, unsure of what to do, but I do. I do want to forgive her. If it weren't for her, I won't grow mature and learned from all those experiences.

"You're forgiven, Rośe" I told her

---

When the clock strikes 12, Lisa kisses me passionately, which makes everyone around laugh, and I hear them clap their hands and cheer for us.

"Eww," and that's when Lisa pulled away and stuck her tongue out to our son, who was looking at us disgusted.

I slap her arm gently, which made everyone laugh again, and I grew embarrassed even more.

Both sides of our family are here. We spent joyous laughter and giggles as we spent Christmas night together. My son, as usual, got a very expensive gift courtesy from my beautiful wife.

Lisa's grandparents are here too. We have already forgiven each other, and I understand their reasons just like I did to Jisoo. They were trapped by the situation, and I know I'll do the same.

"I hope you'll like my present for you," I whispered on my wife's ear and put gentle kisses, which made her stop and gulped hard while she stared at me.

She immediately drank the wine she's holding and hastily opened my gift for her, and she loosened the button of her shirt when she saw my surprise.

It's full of sex toys and even a rope for her to tie me with. Our sex life as a marriage couple was very active, but I wanted to add spice for us to enjoy. And tonight, I could dress as Mrs Claus, as a surprised for later.

"You'll be the death of me." I laugh when I hear her whispered back and grip my waist tightly, and her hands move down to my ass and gripped it secretly.

---

Merry Christmas, everyone!!

Thank you all for reading and supporting and for staying until the end of Unholy.

Enjoy your holidays!!

# Birthday (M) ?

Jennie's POV

It was noon when I arrived. The house was peculiarly silent. It was reasonable since the children had classes today and would come home later this afternoon. I was starting to get nervous as I called for everyone. The maids didn't even answer me as I walked upstairs as the sound of a music was played.

"Lisa, baby?" I called, and just as I opened and stepped my foot inside, my heart hammered against my chest when I felt a blindfold cover my eyes.

"Happy birthday, my beautiful wife," she whispered against my ear, and her warm breath sent shivers to my spine, which made me weak and helpless as I held her arm.

"Li-"

"Shhh," I gulped hard when she shushed me, her hand going to my arm, sliding it up to shoulder, and I felt her planting kisses up to my neck.

Her soft lips teased my earlobe, and I held my breath . My senses became so sensitive when I could see nothing and just anticipate her touches and teases for me.

I felt my centre became so sensitive, and my pulse flickered on my pussy, making me wet immediately.

Her fingertip travels to my waist and down to the hem of my dress, and I gasp loudly when she rips it.

"Lisa!" I wanted to scold her, but her chuckle just makes my knees shake by what she's doing to me.

I felt my dress fall from the ground, and her cold hands went to my

back and draws things I couldn't comprehend. It's making my skin shiver as I keep on whimpering softly.

"I'm still not doing anything, baby, but you're sensitive already," she whispered behind my ears, which made my cheeks heated, and I won't deny,  my body was starting to feel the same as well.

Lisa's warm fingertips played with the hook of my brassiere before I felt her take it off, and her hands went to the hem of my soaked panties, and I gasped for the second time when she ripped it apart.

"Hands on your back," I obliged, and I whimpered when I felt a cold iron cuff on my hands behind me. I shivered as it was cold, but I felt hot as arousal hit me, building slowly, which made me lose my mind, and my breathing started to get heavy.

"Wife?" I heard her ask, her voice sounding so cold and husky which made me bit my lips as my pussy reacted, having this tingling sensation which made me lose control.

As my nakedness was visible for her eyes, I only saw darkness due to the blindfold she had for me, resulting to my own body to be this sensitive and even the warmth of her breath could make me wetter as drops of fluid slowly travels from my thighs down to my legs.

"Fuck!" I heard her cursed, moving closer behind me and I felt her hard manhood pressing on my ass, a thick layer of her jeans was there as a barrier.

I whimper and gasp, trying to hold her body for support when I was about to collapse.

Lisa guided me slowly. Her hands were on my hips, drawing circles near my centre, making it hard for me to walk when she kept on teasing me like that.

"Lisa?" I asked when I didn't feel her presence. I was already kneeling on the bed, and my hands were still cuffed behind me, making it harder for me to move. My chest pounded in excitement, and in fear in where this will be going.

"I'm here, my wife." I heard her behind me.

My loud gasp was heard when she suddenly pushed me, making me lie on my stomach. My head moved to my side, wanting to hear her clearly, but I could only whimper when I felt a cold thing on my back.

Her soft lips trace me with an ice on her mouth. Every time it slides to my skin, send shivers to my nerves as I keep on letting out loud whimpers to her teases.

"Lisa~" I moaned her name when the ice travelled down to my butt cheeks to my inner tights, and I shouted her name when I suddenly felt her cold tongue  on my dripping centre

"Shit! Shit!!" I cursed again and again as I felt trapped and immobilised, and the only thing I could move was my head, and I moaned out loud.

Her hands went to my legs, sliding it up to my waist, and my own body moved and kneeled while Lisa's mouth never left my centre. My own body was in her control as I shouted for more when she's now sucking my clit, flickering it with her tongue. I lost my mind and beg my wife for more. My orgasm was slowly approaching, my breathing started to get heavier , my chest moved frantically, and my eyes shutted off.

"Lisaaaa!!" I shouted her name when I felt a vibration on my clit, her tongue was now buried inside of me as I shouted louder and louder on how she's making me insane.

I can't even think clearly now. My hips move on its own as I keep on moaning her name, whimpering, shaking, gasping for air as my orgasm reaching, making me lose my mind.

"Fuck!! Fuck!! Babyyyyy!!" I cried out when I couldn't stop myself. My eyes watered and, sweats dropping from my skin endlessly. My chest felt like it stopped beating  as I moved my head side to side.

My brows creased, and my toes curled.

"Ohhhhhhh Lisaaaa!!!" I shouted her name again and again as I reached my longed awaited orgasm. My body shook, weak and

helpless as I buried my face on the mattress as I continued to moan loudly.

"That was so hot," I heard her say and even dared to chuckle behind me while I was catching my breath. I heard a dangling of keys, and my hands losses and Lisa took my blinded off.

Although my vision was a bit blurry, I could still see her stupid smile. Her grinned just made me roll my eyes in embarrassment as I buried my face on her chest.

I hug my hand around her waist, looking up and kissing her lips and smiling shyly towards her.

"I thought you're busy with your work?" I asked, still breathless, and Lisa gave me a peck until she pushed her face more, and now I'm lying in my back while she's on top of me. Her hands went to mine, interlocking it above my head.

"I love you, I wouldn't dare to trade you with my work. You come first and always will be. Happy birthday, my beautiful wife, " she said, and just before I could respond, she was already kissing my neck, pecking it down to my collarbone as I felt her leave a mark and I gasp when she kissed me again,  my mouth opened for her as her tongue shove inside me.

I moaned her name, mumbling it again and again as her lips explored my body. My breast became more sensitive as my nipple stood erect as she suck it like a hungry infant, licking circles around my areola, and I cried as she slowly bit it.

"Ouch!" I cried when she bit my stomach. I glared at her, but she only laughed, and her fingers thrusted inside me. I was so lost that I didn't know that her hands were already on my waist, and the other was cupping my wet folds.

She moves inside out, slowly penetrating my walls, and gushing of wetness lubricated my private part that it made a loud slapping sound. I was so embarrassed that I tried to cover my face, but she took it with her free hand and seriously stared at me.

Her eyes were full of lust, and her desire made her this maniac who enjoyed watching me reach my orgasm again and this time I squirted on the sheets, my body shook violently as my hands held her shoulder for support.

"Oh fuck! Fuck me Lisa!!"

"Babyy pleasee!" I couldn't stopped myself but beg. My eyes shutted down as she prolonged my orgasm, penetrating my upper walls more and longer that I curled my toes and squirm once again, tears builds inside my eyes as my mouth hung open, and my back arched while I held my breath, enjoying the sensation she's giving me.

"Fucking Hell!!" I collapsed when she finally took her fingers out. I slumped my body down on the mattress as I caught my breath and slowly opened my eyes, and I saw her hastily taking her shirt and pants off.

When her long and hard shaft was released my pussy reacted again. I was very horny and climbed up to her. My hands went to her dick and I stroked it first before I guided it inside me.

"Shit! Shit!" I cursed as my eyes closed. It just feels so good that my morals got lost, and my strength loses.

"Jennie," Lisa moaned my name, and her hands went to my hips as she guided me. Veins was visible on her neck, sweats glistened around it, and I felt bold and put hickey on my wifes exposed neck.

She groaned, and I held her tight when she moved faster. Thrusting in me so deep, the moisture helps my head lose focus.

In and out

Hard

Deep

Fast

She's just so good that my eyes rolled up. My breast moves and shakes and I gasp when she suck one into her mouth while her

hands played with my clit.

She gave me so much pleasure that I couldn't even think straight, I didn't know what to do and just enjoyed the sensation as I continued to moan and whimpered by how she moved.

"I'm close" I was able to say and I felt her to took my legs and encircled around her waist and I shouted when she stood up and fucked me helplessly.

My hair was already dishevelled, my legs were already resting on her shoulder, and her dick was buried in me so deep. I was hanging while she continue to fuck my brains out, and I could only held her nape for support.

"Ohhhh Lisaaa lisaaaa!!"

"I'm cum- cumming"

"I'm cumming baby- Ohhhhh Fuckkk Fuckkkk Iloveyousooomuchh shiiit!!" I cried out when I reach my orgasm, I came so hard that I lost all my strength and we almost stumble but Lisa held us tighter that our chest touches and I squirm and moaned on her mouth when our lips collided.

I suck her tongue as I continue to moaned her name, sweats made our body glistened as Lisa held her breath and knew she's cumming as well.

"I love you, let's have more babies" I whispered seductively on her ear which made her groaned and I closed my eyes as her cum went inside me. She thrusted more and more as she shouted how crazy I was.

I chuckled as we both catch our breath and whimpered when Lisa and I collapses onto our bed, her cock was still buried inside me.

My chest continue to pound loudly, sweats dripping, and I smile when I saw her looking so hot while she stared at me.

She peaked my lips before she took something on our bedside table, making me whimper as she slowly pulled out.

However, my eyes widened when I saw a beautiful necklace from a famous luxury brand. I can't with this woman. She's spoiling me.

"Happy birthday," she greeted again, and I pecked her lips as I wiped the sweats around her face.

"Thank you, baby, you're the sweetest,"

---

I didn't know that I didn't publish this yesterday. But better late than never.

Happy birthday, Jennie!!

I love you and me, and the love you too and me made me write this. My delulu self was so happy 😂.